

Samuel Kipp
(1753 – 1803)
and his descendents

A biographical and genealogical study

by

Louis Richard, N.B.E., C.A.

**Member of the Historical Society of Montreal
and the French Canadian Genealogical Society**

**13 Woodlawn Avenue
Ottawa, Ontario**

1950

(English translation by Edward and Margaret Kipp 2003)

Works by the same author

Jacob De Witt, 1785-1859, (1949), published in the "Revue d'Histoire de L'Amerique Francaise," Montreal, Volume III, Number 4, March 1950, pages 537-555.

La Famille Loebel (The Loebel Family), (1949), published in "Le Bulletin des Recherches Historique," Levis, Volume 56, numbers 4-5-6, April-May-June 1950, pages 78-89.

Samuel Kipp, 1753-1803, and his descendents, (1950)

In preparation

Histoire de Saint-Anciet, County of Huntingdon.

Genealogy of the Masson Family of Sainte-Genevieve.

Table of Contents

Chapter		Page
	Table of Contents	3
	Preface	4
	Genealogy of Samuel Kipp V	7
I	The Kip Family	8
II	The War of Independence	19
III	In Nova Scotia	30
IV	At Montreal	37
V	The Knapp Family	42
VI	The Hatfield Family	53
VII	The Descendants of Samuel Kipp and Mary Knapp	55
VIII	James Kipp	96
IX	Théophile Bruguière	105
X	List of Appendices	122
X	Documentation	123
	Bibliography (Works Consulted)	140
	General Index to names of persons	145

Preface

In the Catholic cemetery of the city of Joliette, Province of Quebec, peacefully sleep the mortal remains of two aged ladies whose origins and history represent a tie between our Laurentian district and Europe at the time of the Wars of Religion in the 16th century and the Spanish Inquisition.

If one examines the Parish registers of St. Charles Borromée, of Joliette, for the date March 3, 1870, one finds the act of interment of Elizabeth Kipp, aged 78, widow of Médard Bruguière, formerly of Saint-Paul de Lavaltrie, and for the date July 27, 1889, that of her sister, Charlotte Kipp, aged 93, widow of Joseph Désautels, formerly a notary in Montreal.

They were the daughters of Samuel Kipp, American Loyalist of Dutch and Huguenot origin, a descendant of one of the first colonists of the Huguenot and Walloon colony of New Amsterdam, today the city of New York, in the United States.

In 1943, Robert Goffin, Belgian author and historian, supported, in an interesting work⁽¹⁾, the thesis that the establishment of Walloon colonies in America was nothing more than a phase of the Wars of Religion in Europe in the 16th century and that the latter was the direct cause of the emigration of protestants and Huguenots of the low countries and of northern France to the lands of the new continent of America.

The migrations of the Kip family through the north west of continental Europe at this period coincided well with the movements of the population caused by the Wars of Religion in the low countries under the Empire of the Spanish Crown.

In New Amsterdam, the Kip family played an important roll and acquired a certain affluence. A century and a half after their arrival the rebellion of the English colonies against the mother country happened, the circumstances of which for certain members of this family who supported the established power, was the cause of new migration.

Samuel Kipp, active supporter of the Loyalists, was exiled and came to spend the rest of his days in Canada.

It is the history of his origins and of his life that we wish to relate in the present study, as well as to give several biographical notes on his descendants.

The two daughters of Samuel Kipp, Elizabeth and Charlotte, married French Canadians, converted to Catholicism, and as we have already mentioned died at Joliette.

In this city one still finds several descendants of Madame Médard Bruguière, descended from her daughters, wives of Louis Antoine Derome and Laurent Désaulniers.

The progeny of Samuel Kipp are nevertheless spread out in all of the Province of Quebec, and well beyond, including a good number in the United States.

To do a biography of an American Loyalist, that is a “Tory,” as the rebels said, it is necessary to be patient and to be constantly on guard against the party-line of the American historians if one wants to be impartial and to do justice to things.

The history of the American Revolution was written principally by the Americans and the point of view of the Loyalists, or “Tories”, wasn’t given any sympathy.

In 1908, the judge Alfred William Savary, historian of Nova Scotia, wrote on the subject of the Loyalists, saying:

“It was not until about the middle of the last century that the American public awoke to the fact that there could have been any patriotism or public or private virtue in the breast of anyone who espoused the loyal side in the American Revolution. It was the melancholy fate of a Loyalist to be written down a villain before the eyes of posterity; and it has been laborious and difficult to uncover and bring to light the real characters of many worthy men from under the vast load of obloquy with which the American writers had overwhelmed them.”⁽²⁾

The party of the Loyalists in the American Revolution counted in their ranks the majority of the eminent men of the country, those which had until then directed the colony socially and economically. It was therefore, an elite group whose political opinion cannot be condemned as was done by the American historians. Because they were sent into exile, the United States lost their potential contributions, such that judge Savary added:

“.....the same spirit of chivalrous and religious fidelity that marked their dutiful allegiance to the old government would have been transferred to the new, once the terrible struggle in which they had fought and lost was over; and ...the ability and patriotism of their leaders would have been of immense value in helping to overcome, instead of ... promoting or accentuating the initial difficulties and troubles that unavoidably beset the new republic.”⁽²⁾

Happily the tone of the modern American writers has greatly changed, particularly since the American Civil War, since at that time the roll of the government of the new republic had changed to combat a rebellion in the southern states.

In 1915, a British author, Hugh Edward Egerton, said:

“The time is past when it was necessary to speak with hated breath on behalf of the American Loyalists. There has been a great change in the tone of American writers since Sabine first dared hesitatingly and half-heartedly to act as “advocatus diaboli.”⁽³⁾

Amongst serious thinkers the luminous judgment of Tyler in his *Literary History of the American Revolution*⁽⁴⁾ carried conviction; and this modern school of American historians occupy, as a matter of course, the position which he so valiantly won. None the less are our thanks especially due to Mr. Van Tyne⁽⁵⁾ and Mr. Flick⁽⁶⁾ for their singularly luminous and impartial researches in this field. Moreover the war between the North and South, if it did nothing else, brought home to thoughtful Americans the dangers of a

Constitution in the ambiguities of which there was room for a divided allegiance.”⁽⁷⁾

(1) Robert Goffin, *De Pierre Minnit aux Roosevelt*, (New York, 1943).

(2) Alfred William Savary, preface, *Narratives of Colonel David Fanning*, (Toronto, 1908).

(3) Lorenzo Sabine, *Biographical Sketches of Loyalists of the American Revolution*, (Boston, 1848).

(4) Moses Coit Tyler, *The Literary History of the American Revolution*, (New York and London, 1897).

(5) Claude Halstead Van Tyne, author of *The Loyalists in the American Revolution*, (New York, 1902).

(6) Alexander C. Flick, author of *Loyalism in New York during the American Revolution*, (1901).

(7) Hugh Edward Egerton, editor, *The Royal Commission on the Losses and Services of American Loyalists, 1783 to 1785*, (The Roxburghe Club, Oxford, England, 1915).

Genealogy of Samuel Kipp V

	KYPE , Hendrick 1600-1680)			
		KIP , Jacobus (1631- 1690)		
	LUBBERTS , Tryntie			
			KIP , Johannes (1655-1704)	
	deLAMONTAGNE , Johannes			
deFOREST , Jesse (a) (1575-1624)		deLAMONTAGNE , Maria		
	deFOREST , Rachel (1609-)			KIPP , Benjamin (1703-1782)
duCLOUX , Marie				
		KIERSTEDE , Hans		
	JANSEN , Roeloff		KIERSTEDE , Catherine	
		JANSEN , Sara		
	JANS , Anneke			V
		DAVENPORT , William		
			DAVENPORT , William (1677-)	
				DAVENPORT , Dorothy (1715-1807)
			Mary (widow of John Price)	

(a) Founder of New York City.

Chapter I

The Kipp Family

Samuel Kipp was an American Loyalist and was a captain in one of the battalions of the Loyalist Regiment of the County of Westchester who became refugees as a group in Nova Scotia in 1783 after the American War of Independence.

Son of Benjamin Kipp and Dorothy Davenport, he was born the 16th of December 1753, at North Castle, near the current village of Chappaqua, New York, a dozen miles to the north of White Plains, in the county of Westchester, state of New York, at one time an English colony in America, and he died at Montreal, the 23 of February 1803. He was the fifth generation of this family in America.

The place of origin of the Kypes or De Kypes was Alençon in Bretagne, France, where one can trace back to Ruloff De Kype, born about 1510, who took an active part in the Wars of Religion of the 16th century and was killed at the battle of Jarnac, on the Charente, the 13 of March 1569.

This Ruloff De Kype had a son Jean Baptiste, who was a priest and another, named Ruloff, like his father, who became a protestant and immigrated to Amsterdam, in Holland.

It is a grandson of the latter who came to America.

The first of this name on the new continent was Hendrick Hendricksen Kip I (1600-1680), born at Niewenhuys, in Holland, about 1600, and settled later on in Amsterdam, from where he left in 1637 to come to New Amsterdam, the Huguenot-Walloon colony which later became the city of New York. He was accompanied by his wife Tryntie Lubberts, who he had married at Amsterdam, in April 1624, and their five children.

Hendrick Kip I and his sons played an important role in the history of New Netherlands, a Dutch colony situated on the banks of the Hudson River and whose territory forms today the south-east part of the state of New York.

The colony was previously administered from Amsterdam, in Holland, by the West India Company grantee of these territories.

Hendrick Kip became assistant to Peter Stuyvesant, governor, and was part of the council of nine notables charged with the administration of civil affairs and justice.

The arms of the Kip Family were painted on the windows in the first church of New Amsterdam. There were: "Azure, a chevron or, between two griffins sejant argent, beaked and legged or, in chief, and in base a sinister gauntlet proper. Crest – A demi-griffin argent, beaked and legged or, holding in the claws a cross gules. Motto – Vestigia

nulla retrorsum.” The motto could be translated as: Never go backwards; No footprints (lead) back; Never retreat.

The Kips proceeded to acquire large areas of land at New York and the old maps of the city show they were proprietors of a group of buildings, which formed a considerable part of the city.

A part of the actual Nassau Street, between Ann and Spruce Streets, was for a time named Kip Street in honour of one of the family members.

Hendrick Hendricksen Kipp I and Tryntie Lubberts had seven children as follows:

- i. Abraham, born the 6th of May 1625, in Amsterdam, in Holland. Probably died young.
- ii. Isaack, born the 10th of January 1627 in Amsterdam; 1. married the 8th of February 1653 to Catalyntje Snyder; 2. married the 26th of September 1675 to Maria Vervalje (Vermilye) widow of Jean de La Montagne; died in 1678.
- iii. Beertjen, born the 8th of March 1629 in Amsterdam; 1. married the 17 of January 1649 to Janssen Van St. Obyn. 2. married the 12 of December 1677 to Jan Durckssen Meyer; died after 1702.
- iv. ***Jacobus*** (Jacob), born the 16th of May 1631 in Amsterdam; married the 8th of March 1654 to Maria de La Montagne; died the 24th of December 1690.
- v. Heindrik, born the 14th of August 1633 in Amsterdam; married the 29th of February 1660 to Anna de Sille; died in 1670.
- vi. Tryntjen, born the 8th of June 1636 in Amsterdam; married the 10th of August 1659 to Abraham Janssen Van der Heul.
- vii. Femmetje, born the 19th of April 1643 in Amsterdam (New York), in America.

It is from Jacob Kip II (1631-1690), third son of Hendrick Hendricksen Kip I and Tryntje Lubberts, which descends the line that interests us.

Jacob Kip II was born at Amsterdam, in Holland, the 16th of May 1631 and was baptized the 25th of the same month at the old church of Amsterdam. He was thus only 6 years old when he arrived in America with his parents.

History relates that he was a young man of cultivated spirit and great intelligence. Big physically and a happy man, he was one of the popular men of the colony. He was made the first provincial secretary and collector of revenues, under Peter Stuyvesant, and he later on occupied other important civic posts.

About 1654, he acquired land situated on a bay of the East River⁽¹⁾ which was later named Kip's Bay and had a period of celebrity during the American War of Independence.

There he built a solid and imposing house, which he made his country residence. This house, restored but a single time, in 1696, endured about two centuries. It was demolished in 1851, when the municipality of the city of New York extended 35th Street. It occupied the area where this street now crosses 2nd Avenue, in New York⁽²⁾.

During the war, the house of Jacob Kip served Washington as general quarters, for a while in 1776. The 15th of September 1776, an English army debarked its contingents at Kip's Bay, under the protection of 10 warships, and the Kip house, from that time, served as general quarters for Lord Howe and the English army until 1781.

During this period, several prominent persons were lodged there, among which are Sir Henry Clinton, Lieutenant-Colonel Wilhelm von Knyphausen and Baron de Riedesel. The 19th of September 1780, Major Andre was feted, by the English army, who was served a grand dinner the eve of his departure on the special mission, which would cost him his life.

After Jacob Kip II, the property of the Bay Kip passed into the hands of his youngest son Samuel III and at the time of the American Revolution it belonged to the son of the latter, Jacob Kip IV. This land had a considerable area and stretches today from 26th Street to 42nd Street in New York.

Returning now to Jacob Kip II. The 8th of March 1654, in the Walloon Reformed Church of New Amsterdam, he married Maria de La Montagne (1637-1711) born at sea, off the island of Medère, the 26th of January 1637, daughter of Jean Mousnier de La Montagne, French Huguenot doctor who became a member of the council of the Governor Wilhelm Kieft, and his wife, Rachel De Forest, daughter of Jesse De Forest, well known historic personage, recognized as the true founder of the city of New York.

This latter, grandfather of the wife of Jacob Kip II merits special mention.

Jesse De Forest, merchant dyer, was born at Avesnes, in Hainault, about 1575, and married Marie Du Cloux, the 23rd of September 1601, at Sedan. We next find him at Leyden, in Holland, where his daughter Rachel was born in 1609. In July 1621, he presented to the King of England, James I, a petition signed by 56 heads of Walloon families, among which was Jean de La Montagne, his future son-in-law, asking permission to emigrate to Virginia, an English Colony in America. This project failed because of opposition from the Virginia Company.

In 1623, Jesse De Forest was authorized by the West India Company to enlist colonists for America. Twenty-six ships departed for Brazil and Guyana, filled with soldiers and colonists, including Jesse De Forest and his sons. The ship which carried them, the New Netherland, of 260 tons, reached Guyana but then turned north and after a stop on the coast of Florida, reached the Mauritius River, original name of the Hudson River, where the debarkation was carried out.

The De Forest family as well as the other Walloon colonists who came with them on the initiative of Jesse De Forest were the first settlers of New Amsterdam (today New York) and of Fort Orange (today Albany). Jesse De Forest did not come there himself and it is believed that he landed at Guyana and died there.⁽³⁾

The landing of the Walloon colonists on the Hudson took place in the spring of the year 1624. In 1924, the city of New York commemorated this event by the erection of a monument to the memory of Jesse De Forest and his Walloon colonists, at the Battery Square, in this year, which is considered to be the third centenary of the founding of the city.

On the occasion of this anniversary, the Federal Postal service of the United States issued a series of three commemorative postal stamps recalling the arrival of the first founding colonists.

Jacob (Jacobus) Kip II and Maria de La Montagne had eleven children, all baptized at the Old Dutch Church or the Walloon Reformed Church of New York, as follows:

- i. **Johannes**, born the 3rd of February 1655; married the 4th of September 1681 to Catherine Kierstede; died in 1704
- ii. Jacobus, born the 14 of October 1656; married the 28th of May 1685 to Hendrickje Wessels, widow of Gelyn Verplanck; died on 1702.
- iii. Abraham, born the 21st of December 1658; married the 26th of January 1697 to Catalina De Lancy, widow of Isaac Ven Vleck; died before the 30th of November 1720.
- iv. Jesse, born the 16th of December 1660; married about the 30th of September 1695 to Maria Stevens; died in April 1722.
- v. Rachel, born the 7th of January 1664; married the 18th of July 1683 to Lucas Kierstede.
- vi. Maryken (Maria) , born the 2nd of December 1666; married the 4th of August 1687 to Dirck Hooglant.
- vii. Hendricus (Hendrick) , born the 12th of January 1669; married the 10 June 1697 to Magdalena Van Vleck; died in 1698.
- viii. Catharina, born the 25th of January 1671; married the 11 of July 1697 to Johannes Ryckman.
- ix. Petrus, born the 25th of December 1674; died the 28th of August 1686.
- x. Benjamin, born the 6th of August 1678, died in 1702, bachelor.
- xi. Samuel, born the 4th of November 1682; married the 20th of October 1705 to Margrietje Ryckman, at Albany; died the 13th of November 1740.

It is by Johannes, the eldest of the family, that our line continues.

Johannes Kip III (1655-1704) was born at New Amsterdam, the 3rd of February 1655 and was baptized the 21st of the same month. He was a brewer at New York, and, like his father; was a member of the council of civic administration of the city.

The 4th of September 1681, at the Walloon Reformed Church of New York, he married Catharina Kierstede, born the 4th of January 1660, daughter of the doctor Hans Kierstede, one of the first doctors to practice medicine at New York, originally from Haegdenburg, duchy of Saxe, in Germany, and of his wife Sara Jansen.

He died in 1704, and his will made in 1702, was attested the 11th of November 1704.

Johannes Kip III and Catharina Kierstede had thirteen children, all baptized in the Walloon Reformed Church of New York, as follows:

- i. Jacob, baptized the 4th of November 1682; married December 1704, to Cathalina de Hart; died in 1726.
- ii. Hans, baptized the 5th of September 1684; died young.
- iii. Maria, baptized the 19th of September 1686; married the 24th of June 1710 to Abraham Van Vleck.
- iv. Sarah, baptized the 11 of November 1688.
- v. Hans, baptized the 5th of October 1690.
- vi. Blandina, baptized the 3rd of February 1692.
- vii. Johannes, baptized the 31st of January 1694; married the 12th of August 1727 to Sarah Spier.
- viii. Blandina, baptized the 26th of April 1696.
- ix. Catharina, baptized the 7th of July 1697; died young.
- x. Catharina, baptized the 16 of October 1698; married the 27th of July 1729 to Jacobus Kip.
- xi. Henricus, baptized the 20th of October 1700.
- xii. **Benjamin**, baptized the 21st of March 1703; married in 1733 to Dorothy Davenport; died the 24th of May 1782, at Morrisania.
- xiii. Blandina, baptized the 21st of March 1703, twin of Benjamin.

The genealogical details cited to here are based on the work of Robert Bolton⁽⁴⁾, E.R. Purple⁽⁵⁾, and genealogists of the Kip family, and they are also in keeping with a family tree of this branch of the family in the possession of Samuel A. Kipp, of Ossining, New York, and which a copy is now on deposit in the archives of the Library of Congress of the United States, in Washington, D.C.

They are also in keeping with Frederic Ellsworth Kip⁽⁶⁾ except that the later maintains that the Benjamin Kipp married to Dorothy Davenport was Benjamin Kipp, born the 24th of May 1714, the son of Jesse Kip III, brother of Johannes Kip III, and of Maria Stevens.

Because of the pillage and destruction which took place in the county of Westchester during the American Revolution, a large number of the registers of baptism, marriage and death of the churches of the region are missing and for this reason the genealogy of this branch of the Kip family, as well as for many other families of the county may not be established with certainty on certain details.

The hypothesis of Frederick Ellsworth Kip puts in doubt the exact ascendance of this Benjamin Kip, a regrettable circumstance because it concerns, in this person, the father of Samuel Kipp V, the Loyalist captain who took refuge in Canada, principal subject of this study.

Frederic Ellsworth Kip cites several reasons to defend his theory that one must consider Benjamin Kipp, the spouse of Dorothy Davenport, as the son of Jesse Kip and Maria Stevens, but the latter are not always convincing. It is befitting now to reject his hypothesis and to follow the genealogical data of the others who wrote formerly and who perhaps profited from personal knowledge of the contemporaries of the persons in question.

In any case the doubt that he has placed on the exact identity of Benjamin Kip IV, the father of our Samuel Kipp, as doubtful as it is, is not really important because Johannes Kip III and Jesse Kip III were two brothers, as we saw. There is, naturally, the maternal side which is affected.

Benjamin Kipp, the son of Johannes Kip and of Catherine Kierstede had as an ancestor on the maternal side, the famous Anneke Jans Bogardus, a woman famous for her charms, her beauty and her great intelligence, but above all celebrated because of assets left when she died and which were made the subject of litigation and numerous processes for almost three centuries.

Anneke Jans, wife in the first wedding of Roeloff Jansen and in the second wedding of Domine Everardus Bogardus, died in 1663, leaving to her children a large farm at New Amsterdam, which would have comprised today an important part of the financial quarter of the city of New York. One can imagine the value of this property today.

As well, in the settlement of the succession of Anneke Jans and the sale of this farm by her children there slipped in several difficulties in the procedures followed and the generations following took advantage to demand that the court declare null certain subsequent sales and enter into possession of theirs rights.

The efforts of these heirs became more and more ardent so that the property or the multiple subdivisions became more valuable, that is to say that the hoard became more enticing.

Trinity Church, Broadway Street, facing Wall Street, is situated on a part of this farm and the corporation which manages the temporal affairs have had to, for two centuries, defend their property rights over the course of numerous processes which were brought against them by several groups of heirs of Anneke Jans.

All the avenues have been attempted and none of the actions brought by the heirs have ever succeeded and no one has profited except the interested lawyers.

James Watson Gerard (1822-1900), eminent lawyer of New York, made a historical resume of the estate of Anneke Jans, and of the useless lawsuits which this succession caused, in an interesting article, which appeared in May 1885, in "Harper's New Monthly Magazine," of New York.

Catharine Kierstede, the wife of Johannes Kip III, was the daughter of Hans Kierstede, doctor, and of Sara Jansen, and the latter was the daughter of Anneke Jans and Roeloff Jansen, her first husband. It is thus that the branch of Johannes Kip III is heir of Anneke Jans, and as Benjamin Kipp IV was descended, it follows that all his descendants, including our Samuel Kipp, are heirs to this farm.

The fact that the children of Benjamin Kipp and of Dorothy Davenport had been excluded from a Sale Act passed in 1795, and this act claimed to name all the living heirs of Anneke Jans, is the principal reason given by Frederic Ellsworth Kip that Benjamin Kipp, husband of Dorothy Davenport, was not the son of Johannes Kip III, according to the genealogical tree of Samuel A. Kipp, of Ossining, or the Kip family historians.

There is probably a reason for this omission and this reason will become clearer in the chapter following, since we see that the loyalists were forced out (ie. their belongings were confiscated).

Benjamin Kip IV settled in Westchester County around 1732, where he purchased 400 acres of land, in North Castle Township. This house was located near to the present village of Chappaqua, in the State of New York⁽⁷⁾ on the road which led to Pines Bridge at White Plains and where one could find at that time the name of Kip Street. On modern road maps, this part of the road is called Hardscrabble Road.

The district is also fairly mountainous and, at the time of the American Revolution was very sparsely inhabited. It is part of the township of North Castle which was separated, after the revolution, in order to create the township known today under the name of Newcastle.

Two modern New York State thruways pass through, the Taconic State Parkway and the Saw Hill River Parkway extension.

It is in the North Castle area where Benjamin Kipp IV lived from 1732 until 1778, and it is there that his son Samuel Kipp V was born, the subject of our study, December 16, 1753.

In certain documents of the century, Benjamin Kipp is said to live at Philipsburgh. It is the name of a large manor granted to the Philipse family on the Hudson River from Manhattan Island to the mouth of the Croton River, approximately two miles north of Ossining, and extending to the east as far as the Bronx River. But the land of Benjamin Kipp was outside of these boundaries, and the township of Newcastle, where it is situated, was never made part of this estate but rather was a patent given to Robert Walter, Caleb Heathcote, and other associates, February 14, 1701-2. It is assumed that

those who designated the land as within the grant were not aware of the area and were mistaken about the distinction between Philipsburgh and North Castle or Newcastle believing that the area of the last township was only a section in the immense Philippe grant.

The difference is important as the Philippses did not sell their land but rented them to tenants retaining rights to mineral resources whereas Walter et al sold theirs without restrictions.

During the period of the American Revolution, Benjamin Kipp's land was improved. Although the land was more than 317 acres, there were 60 acres under cultivation.⁽⁸⁾ He had constructed a house and some outbuildings and also had a beautiful orchard.

The improved land in the township of North Castle included almost seven acres, near New York, which, according to the proprietor was worth at least 2,200 pounds, a considerable value for that period.

Becoming a monied owner, with part of his land rented to some tenant farmers, Benjamin Kipp was, it was said, now part of the small class of aristocratic country land owners and exercised a certain local political influence. He was justice of the peace and magistrate under the British government.

His son, William Kipp, lived in the same area as Benjamin and was said in official documents to be from Philipsburgh.

In 1733, Benjamin Kipp IV married Dorothy Davenport (1715-1807), 18 years old, daughter of William Davenport, of West Farms, in the manor of Pelham, Westchester County. Dorothy's surname is unknown but she had the first name of Mary and was a widow from a first marriage with John Price.

The Davenport family was originally from London, England.

Benjamin Kipp IV and Dorothy Davenport had 12 children, as follows:

1. Mary, born September 18, 1734; died young.
2. William, born June 28, 1736; died young.
3. Elisabeth, born April 9, 1733[8]; 1st married in 1756 to John Powell; 2nd married to George Bull.
4. Jesse, born February 23, 1740; married in 1763 to Ann Haight; died January 1, 1780.
5. Abraham, born March 22, 1743; married to Phoebe Haight; died before 1780.
6. Jacobus, born February 28, 1745, died young.
7. Sarah, born September 20, 1746, married to James Weeks.
8. William, born December 1748; married December 3, 1770, to Mary Merritt; died October 19, 1800.
9. **James**, born April 6, 1751; married to Zipporah Carpenter; drowned around 1784 in Nova Scotia.

10. **Samuel**, born December 16, 1753, first married to Freelope Totten; 2nd married in 1787 to Mary Knapp; died February 23, 1803.
11. **Thomas**, born July 14, 1756; married to Abigail Hatfield, died September 1, 1823.
12. **Mary**, born February 14, 1761; married to Robert Runnells.

Samuel Kipp V, the principal subject of our historical study, the one whose migrations and business interests we are following, was born then at North Castle, December 16, 1753, one of the youngest children in a family of six sons and three daughters.

The date of his birth is written in the genealogical table of Samuel A. Kipp which we have already cited, and his date of death, February 23, 1803, is also given correctly.

You can see there that Samuel Kipp V was married to Freelope Totten and we read there that they had five children but there is no mention in this table of his family at Montreal, after the exile, which indicates that the writer was ignorant of the details on Samuel Kipp after the American Revolution. And the other Kipp family genealogists have not made any mention either. This is the customary silence with respect to a loyalist.

Samuel Kipp V was married, before the American Revolution, to Freelope Totten, third daughter of Peter Totten, an innkeeper of North Castle, and his wife Freelope. From this marriage were born, not five but four children as follows:

1. Freelope, married to Silas Arnold
2. Samuel, born February 24, 1780; married to Tamar Thorn; died January 11, 1848.
3. Sarah, married to an Arnold.
4. Lydia, married to John B. Brady.

This family is still in the County of Westchester and did not appear to have followed Samuel Kipp when he left for Nova Scotia.

One conclusion can be drawn and it is that the family of Samuel Kipp V, by his first marriage, because he remarried later, refused to follow him into exile, after the war, in June 1783.

Cases of such separations in the bosom of the families of Loyalists from the American Revolution are not rare. Influenced by their elderly parents, some wives chose political parties in opposition to their husbands and irreconcilable separations occurred.

This was probably the case for Samuel Kipp, who left alone for exile. In a list of Loyalists prepared at Digby, Nova Scotia, in 1784, he is listed alone.⁽⁹⁾

Peter Totten his father-in-law, died in 1788, in the county of Westchester, and his will was proved at White Plains.⁽¹⁰⁾ It is said that he took the side of the revolution against England, for he did not want, so to speak, that the partisans of the revolution would live in the state of New York after the war. One can see easily that he had influenced his daughter and her children to abandon Samuel Kipp, who one can see, became an ardent Loyalist partisan.

We do not know the date of death of Freelove Totten, the first wife of Samuel Kipp.

The will of Peter Totten, proved in 1788, after the war, was dated December 7 1760, and named Benjamin Kipp of Philipsburgh, the father of Samuel Kipp, as one of the executors. The relations between the Kipp and Totten families were very friendly before the war.

(1) "... bought an old plantation which included part of George Baxter's quondam (former) farm and stretched along the East River shore...". Mrs. Schuyler Van Rensselaer, *History of the City of New York in the Seventeenth Century*, 2 Vols., New York, 1909.

(2) John Fiske, in *The Dutch and Quaker Colonies of America*, (London, 1899, 2 Vols.) said, in speaking of the city of New York about 1680 (vol. 2, page 70): "About a mile above the Bowery Village, the road began to make its way over wild and rugged hills, with few traces of human occupation save at the well-kept farm of Jacobus Kip, at the deep bight of the East River between Thirty-third and Thirty-seventh streets which is still known as Kip's Bay. Kip's massive and stately house, which he built in 1655, being then secretary of New Netherlands, was demolished in 1851, because it occupied the space where Thirty-fifth street now crosses Second Avenue.

(3) *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 1925, V. VIII, 592-3.

(4) Robert Bolton, *The History of the Several Towns Manors, and Patents of the County of Westchester from its first settlement to the Present Time*, (2 Vols. New York, 1848). See also the edition of 1881, Appendix A, Vol. 2, pp. 741-2.

(5) E.R. Purple, *Contributions to the History of the Ancient Families of New York*, New York Genealogical and Biographical Record, 8 (1877): 67-73 and 124-133.

(6) Frederic Ellsworth Kip and Margarita Lansing Hawley, *History of the Kip Family in America*, Boston, 1928.

(7) Madame Olive C. Rich, of Ossining, New York, in a letter dated February 1, 1950, said that the Kipp land is now inundated since the construction of the Croton Reservoir, a water reservoir system which supplies water to New York City.

(8) See appendix VI, Chapter 10.

(9) Judge A.W. Savary, *Muster role of disbanded officers, discharged and disbanded soldiers and loyalists mustered at Digby the 29th day of May 1784, New York*, Genealogical and Biographical Record, Volume 34, page 123.

(10) Archives of the Surrogate's Office in the County of Westchester. Information communicated February 1, 1946 by Mildred E. Strubble, corresponding secretary for the

Westchester County Historical Society, County Office Building, White Plains, N.Y.

Chapter II

The War of Independence

For those who know the immense American country of our day, with its population attaining close to 10 million souls and extending itself outside the Island of Manhattan in the districts of the Bronx, Yonkers and Pelham, it is difficult to portray the City of New York in the time of the Revolution, that is from 1775 to 1783.

The development of the city did not pass the current Hester Street and was bounded at the extreme south point of the Island of Manhattan of which it probably did not occupy the hundredth part in surface.

Its population numbered scarcely 22,000 inhabitants, being less in comparison, for example, than the actual population (1949) of the city of Shawinigan Falls, in the Province of Quebec.

The location of the Central Park of our day, in New York, was still five or six miles from the city and the northern part was the site of the village of Bloomingdale, at the time of the American Revolution, site of the country property of the De Lanceys.

The estate of the Kips of Kip's Bay was then two or three miles out in the country.

Further away, the village of Morrisania on the north branch of the Harlem River, at the extreme south point of the County of Westchester, was eight to ten miles from the city. The site is occupied today, in the Bronx, by the tracks of the New York, New Haven and Hartford railroad, towards 135th Street.

And the city of White Plains which one reaches now by the network of New York underground subway tunnels, was more than thirty miles from the city.

New York yielded in importance to Philadelphia, which counted 40,000 souls, and to Boston, which in spite of its smaller population of 20,000 inhabitants was the center of a more advanced intellectual culture, and Charleston, in Virginia, which had no more than 10,000 population, was as well a rival to these cities.

The City of New York, even if it was the site of the government of the English colony of the same name, did not have the importance that she has now with respect to the rest of the state.

Many large properties, in the City, and especially in the counties to the North of New York, belonged to influential families such as the Van Courtlands, the Morrisises, the De Lanceys, the Robinsons, etc., families which constituted the aristocracy of the country and the dominant group in the government, a large number of important official posts in the Province were held by members of these families.

The De Lancey family, of French origin, was one of the richest and the most influential in the colony.

James De Lancey (1703-1760) was chief justice of the Province then became its Lieutenant-governor. His brother, the Colonel Oliver De Lancey (1717-1785) was the senior officer of the provincial militia of New York and became brigadier-general during the hostilities. Another brother, Peter De Lancey, was the representative of the County of Westchester in the Legislative Assembly, from 1750 to 1768, and had married Elizabeth Colden, daughter of the former lieutenant-governor of the Province, Cadwallader Colden.

From the beginning of the troubles, all of these men were necessarily inclined to side with the powerful establishment and oppose the rebellion.

Since the time of Peter Stuyvesant and the rule of Holland, several members of the Kip family had also held positions in the administration and likewise also acquired considerable properties and they exercised a certain political influence under the English regime.

In a general fashion, therefore, the families of the Dutch and Walloon origins, above all grouped in the colony of New York, were much more disposed to remain loyal to England than the descendants of the English colonies.

Benjamin Kipp, although established in the County of Westchester since 1732, had maintained constant relations with his cousins in New York, including his first cousin, Jacob Kipp, the owner of the area of Kip's Bay, as well as with the De Lanceys, whose lands in the area of Bloomingdale, adjoined those of Jacob Kip.

In Westchester, Benjamin Kipp and his sons were friendly with of James De Lancey (1746-1804), the sheriff of the county since 1770 and the sons of Peter De Lancey who was established at West Farms, on the Bronx River, where he had constructed a mill.

Because of the environment where he lived and the influences, which surrounded them, Benjamin Kipp and his sons sided against the insurgents when the colonies revolted.

Benjamin Kipp himself, having already attained over 70 years of age was not able to take an active part in the events, but several of his sons launched themselves into the conflict and risked all.

It is his son, Samuel, who, under the influence of his friend the sheriff James De Lancey, appears to have been the most active. Scarcely aged 22 years, he enrolled in the English forces some time after the battle of Long Island the 27th of August 1776.

He served first in the provincial militia as a volunteer in the Loyalist Regiment of the Queen's Rangers, under the command of Colonel Robert Rogers, and took part in the campaign of the autumn of 1776, the one in which the American troops under General George Washington were routed, after the taking of New York, Long Island at White

Plains and North Castle, then descending the West bank of the Hudson, by Newark, to the Delaware River.

For Samuel Kipp, this campaign was to take an unintended course as the historians of the American Revolution reported that the Queen's Rangers suffered a route in the engagement of White Plains, the 28th of October 1776.

The summer of 1777 Colonel Oliver De Lancey formed the regiment of Loyalists from Westchester County and Samuel Kipp was a member from the beginning.

This regiment was organized at the request of the Royal Governor of the Province of New York, William Tryon, "...to serve in the defense of Long Island and for other purposes," and provided De Lancey, who raised it at his own expense, a promotion in grade to Brigadier-General. It was composed of three battalions, of which the two first were sent to the British armies in the south, contrary to the original intention of having the regiment serve in the defense of Long Island. The third battalion, commanded by Colonel Richard Hewlett, was billeted at Lloyd's Neck, in the neighbourhood of New York.

From the ranks of this third battalion, a light cavalry corps was immediately formed the "Westchester Light Horse," composed at first of 50 men, but soon augmented to create, in 1781, a battalion of 490 men with 116 horses, with the special mission of keeping the supply lines of the British armies and the population of the village of New York free.

From the time of its formation, the "Westchester Light Horse," was placed under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel James De Lancey, the former sheriff of the county before the troubles and the nephew of Brigadier-General Oliver De Lancey.

To form his cavalry corps, Colonel James De Lancey recruited his men from among the men of Westchester County and he invited Samuel Kipp to join him, and it is as a member of this corps that he served during the rest of the war.

From the time of the formation of the regiment of Westchester Loyalists, Brigadier-General Oliver De Lancey offered to all honourable men who formed a company of volunteers the opportunity to appoint from amongst his men one captain, one lieutenant, and one ensign. Samuel Kipp had recruited a company from amongst the Kipp tenants at North Castle and he placed this company at the command of Colonel James De Lancey's "Westchester Light Horse."

In this cavalry corps were Captain Gilbert Totten of North Castle, probably a parent of Freelove Totten, the first wife of Samuel Kipp, and Captain Moses Knapp of Yorktown, who we will reencounter later in this narrative.

The "Westchester Light Horse," similarly to the principal regiment of the Loyalists of Westchester, was formed at the demand of Governor Tryon. The 3rd of October 1777, the

latter wrote as follows, to Lord George Germain, secretary to the colonies, in the ministry of Lord North, in England:

“I have raised a Troop of Light Horse from the Westchester Militia to consist of fifty private Men to serve during the campaign. They are cantoned between our lines and the Rebels at White Plains and have taken up several Deserters, for which I give them a guinea each man, which checks the evil spirit of Desertion.”

“This troop is truly (the) “Elite” of the Country, and their Capt’n (is) Mr. James De Lancey who is also Colonel of the Militia of Westchester County; I have much confidence in them, for their spirited behaviour.”⁽¹⁾

The battalion was billeted first at King’s Bridge, Morrisania, then at the De Lancey Mills, at West Farms, on the Bronx River, and the principal field of operation was the famous “Neutral Ground,” that part of the county of Westchester situated between the English lines, on the Island of Manhattan, and the American lines, which moved often but finished by settling approximately along the line which went from the River Croton, in the north, to the Strait of Long Island, territory which was considered to be neutral by the regular armies, after the capture of New York by the British in 1776.

It is in this neutral territory that the celebrated American novelist, James Fenimore Cooper, married to a De Lancey, situated the plot of his first novel, “The Spy,” published in 1821 and whose action took place at the time of the American Revolution.

More or less abandoned to its lot by the regular armies, this neutral territory had to submit to the frequent raids on both side and its inhabitants lived in a state of restlessness, and eventually it finished by being almost completely uninhabited.

The resources of the two camps became exhausted and the Loyalist side receiving no material aid from the English government overseas, livestock, and provisions became the prime military objective and their capture the principal point of many of these raids. They were not discomforted in each camp to harass the opposing partisans, and carry off their supplies, in this manner.

The success of the De Lancey troops also know by the name “De Lancey’s Horse,” in this sort of action against the livestock of the partisans of the revolt, stirred up a relentless hatred on the part of the Americans against the group that they called the “Cowboys.” The American historians impartially admit that, despite the fact that the battalion of the “Westchester Light Horse,” attracted a special hatred on the part of the Americans in the county, one cannot charge them with any unusual acts of aggression in the type of combat they were subjected too.⁽²⁾

The battalion had numerous engagements with the troops of the rebels and also made numerous reconnaissance actions which allowed them to maintain complete control, during the war, of enemy movements. They captured a large number of prisoners, which

allowed the British army to exchange and ransom their officers and soldiers in the hands of the rebels.

Samuel Kipp was one De Lancey's most active officers and he distinguished himself in many engagements. He participated on many occasions in actions against the rebels, with the Hessian German mercenary regiments, who were engaged by the King of England to combat the rebellion in the colonies, and he possessed a written devotion and loyalty, signed by Marquard, aide-de-camp, on behalf of Lieutenant-General Friedrich Wilhelm von Lossberg, who became commander-in-chief of the Hessian division in New York, after the departure of Lieutenant-General Wilhelm von Knyphausen for Europe in 1782.

The 19th of November 1779, he was promoted to Lieutenant by the Governor William Tryon. He served then under the immediate command of Captain Moses Knapp, and the following year, even though he was not 26 years old he took the command of a troop of the battalion with the rank of Captain.

One sees that in organizing the cavalry campaign among the Loyalist tenants including the Kipps, in 1777, he had not assigned to himself one of the ranks promised by the Brigadier-General Oliver De Lancey, but that he had already distributed those honours to those more experienced than him.

The Reverend Robert Bolton, historian of the County of Westchester, said that it was Samuel Kipp who commanded the battalion, the 13th of May 1781, during a raid of the Westchester Light Horse against an advanced post commanded by Colonel Christopher Greene, of the 1st Regiment of Rhode Island, of the American Lines, at the Croton River, a little to the west of Pine's Bridge, at a strategic point which defended a passage to a ford across the river.

Kipp, Knapp and Totten were natives of this corner of the country and knew that area well. The estate of the Kipps was only several miles from the area and the Tottens were close neighbours, while Captain Moses Knapp lived before the war a little to the north of Greene's Post.⁽³⁾

The latter had established his general quarters in the house of the Davenport family, probably related to Dorothy Davenport, mother of Samuel Kipp.

There were many inhabitants sympathetic to the Loyalist cause in the area and several of them would have made known to De Lancey and his men that the guards to the passage to the ford were lifted at certain hours of the day, Colonel Greene judging that the English troops would not risk crossing the river in the daylight.

Profiting on this information, Kipp left West Farms with 60 Dragoons and 200 infantry soldiers and proceeded to the Croton River at the appropriate moment. As soon as the guard was lifted, the battalion risked the flow of the water and surprised the Americans, the commandant and several of his men even still sleeping.

Alerted they opened fire. Several men of the Loyalist Corps penetrated the Davenport house and during the fight Major Flagg and a Lieutenant were killed and Colonel Greene was mortally wounded, and died shortly after.

The Americans lost these three officers and six soldiers and thirty-three were made prisoner by Kipp's men.

Greene and Flagg are considered as heroes of the American Revolution and in 1900, the Government of the United States erected a monument on their tombs in the cemetery of the Presbyterian Church, at Crompond, New York.

Samuel Kipp was grievously wounded at the height of the engagement between a troop of De Lancey's battalion and the troops of the rebels, at Harrison, Sunday morning, the 2nd of December 1781.

A detachment of 40 or so men of the battalion of the Westchester Light Horse, under the command of Colonel Holmes and Captain Kipp, surprised that morning, a detachment of rebel American troops, under the command of Captain Sackett on King Street, near the Hotel Merritt, at Harrison, a little village several miles from the coast, on the Straits of Long Island.

Captain Sackett, who was breakfasting with two of his men in a house, at some distance from his detachment, was made prisoner and Lieutenant Mosier, to whom command passed, was called upon to surrender, with his troops, by Captain Kipp.

A battle ensued and Mosier, placing his troops in a square, succeeded, with his men armed with rifles with bayonets mounted, in repulsing the assaults of the cavalry troop of Holmes and Kipp, armed with sabers.

The horses of these two officers were killed in a volley.

Captain Samuel Kipp, lying on the ground, under the body of his horse which held his leg, received suddenly a bayonet across his thigh. The strike was made by an American negro soldier named John Patterson who had been a prisoner of Captain Kipp, at Morrisania, several months previously, and demanded nothing more than to exercise his vengeance.

In the general confusion which followed, Mosier's troop escaped into the woods.

A cart was brought and Captain Kipp, gravely wounded, was transported to the Loyalist Camp at Morrisania. The enemy reported that Kipp Was mortally wounded but he survived, even though it meant the end of his participation in all active service⁽⁴⁾.

He felt the effects of the wound for the rest of his life and it was the direct cause of his death at a relatively young age, being 49 years, in 1803.

Incidentally, his aggressor, the negroe Patterson, was more successful than him in terms of longevity, because he lived it seems until the advanced age of 103 years.

The battle at Harrison, where Captain Samuel Kipp was seriously wounded, was reported, in spite of the small importance of the number of forces engaged, in the journals of the period, and made an echo even in Europe.

This engagement was cited as an example of the effectiveness of defence with a bayonet and of the effective disposition of the infantry into a square against the attack of cavalry.

The battle at Harrison is another of the incidents of the American Revolution of which the Government of the United States has recalled as a historic souvenir by erecting a commemorative plaque, which one may see today, on the site, at Harrison, New York.⁽⁵⁾

Amongst the other sons of Benjamin Kipp, Thomas the youngest, served in the Loyalist regiment, Volunteers of Westchester, in the regular Royal militia, with the rank of Lieutenant. His superior officer was his brother-in-law Colonel Isaac Hatfield, of Yorktown, who was also the brother-in-law of Moses Knapp of the Westchester Light Horse also from Yorktown.

James Kipp, another son of Benjamin, served also in the Loyalist troops.

Jesse Kipp, the oldest of this family, died during the war, on January 1, 1780, at 39 years. We do not know the cause of his death.

About 1778, the lines of the American armies, in the south, passed the village of North Castle, so that the land where the estate of Benjamin Kipp was situated was under the domination of the rebels.

Living at his home, Benjamin Kipp and the members of his family who accompanied him again quickly felt the effects of the pressure always growing that the rebel state of New York exercised against the suspicious inhabitants who were recognized as having sympathies with the Loyalist cause.

The Convention of Representatives of the state rebels of New York had promulgated a law burdening the properties of the senior of the family, so many rebels themselves rather than Loyalists, who had their sons in the Loyalist Armed forces, of a tax of nine deniers per pound of assessment, for each son. Benjamin Kipp, who had three sons in the service of the English cause, had to pay a tax of twenty-seven deniers per pound, being more than 10% of the value of his property.

Having finally manifested openly the sentiments of the Loyalists towards England, he was compelled, in November 1778, to flee North Castle, with his family and to take refuge within the English Lines. We find the Kipp family at New York about the 1st of July 1779, but the following year, being 1780, they were at Morrisania, where a large

number of Loyalists of the County of Westchester appeared to have found refuge. WE see that he Military Camp of the Battalion of the Westchester Light Horse was situated in this area and it is possible that the units where the two sons Thomas and James served were also in the area and there was also a certain comfort from the miseries of this family in being together.

The 3rd of August 1780, at Morrisania, Benjamin Kipp, probably feeling his days in danger, in these troubled times, wrote his will by which he left his property, except for several particular legacies, to his four sons who survived him, William, James, Samuel and Thomas.

Neither he nor his sons would ever see again the family estate of North Castle which they had left. The 22nd of October 1779, the Convention of the State of New York, sitting for its third session, at Kingston, in the County of Ulster, had promulgated, in chapter XXIV, a law seizing the property of the Loyalists.

The law, commonly called the New York Attainder Act of 1779, was entitled: “An Act for the forfeiture and Sales of the Estates of persons who have adhered to the Enemies of this State and for declaring the sovereignty of the People of the State in respect to all property within the same.”

In virtue of this measure, the properties of all persons acknowledged as guilty of treason against the rebel State, were confiscated.

An action was brought against Benjamin Kipp to take possession of his properties. Situated in the Canton of North Castle, the lands under the control of the revolutionary forces and the action was easy as well as final.

The 22nd of May 1781, before the Grand Jury of the Sessions of the Peace of the revolutionary State of New York, gathered at Upper Salem, in the County of Westchester, Benjamin Kipp, was accused of having adhered to the enemies of the state.

A citizen of Westchester, of the name of Elijah Hunter, came and witnessed, before the Grand Jury, that in May 1778, Benjamin Kipp lived with his family, on the farm at North Castle, “an area not in the power or possession of the fleets of the King of Great Britain,” and that the 1st of July 1779, he had been seen at New York, an area which, on the contrary, was in the power of the forces of the armies of Great Britain.

The witness did not say that he himself had been at New York in July 1779, what matters is that it was enough to implicate the poor man in virtue of the article IX of the above mentioned law and declare him guilty of treason. He had done nothing more than live true to the power of the establishment and under the Empire of which he had lived his life.

The 31st of July 1781, the affair was put before the Supreme Court of the State, by the Grand Jury, and Benjamin Kipp was summoned to appear before the tribunal to defend

the accusation of treason but it would have been useless and very imprudent, for him, to present himself, thus he abstained, having sought refuge in the enemy camp of the State at Morrisania. One might even ask if he had any knowledge of these proceedings.

The unfavourable turn of political events had without doubt affected him greatly. The surrender of the English forces of Cornwallis, at Yorktown, in Virginia, the 19th of October 1781, foreshadowed the final victory of the revolutionaries and must have made him lose all hope of regaining possession of his Estate at North Castle.

The 24th of May 1782, he died at Morrisania, where he had sought refuge following his flight from North Castle, leaving as survivors, his wife, born Dorothy Davenport, his four sons, William, James, Samuel, and Thomas, and several daughters. He was 79 years old.

The 26th of October 1782, some five months after his death, the Supreme Court of the State of New York rendered a definitive judgment confiscating his property.

Nevertheless, it was not until after the signing of the Treaty of Paris, in 1783, recognizing the Independence of the United States, and giving force to the laws and measures voted by the Convention, that the State of New York decided to dispose of the confiscated properties of the Loyalists.

The estate of Benjamin Kipp, at North Castle, was sold, at a profit to the State of the relatively minimum sum of 500 pounds. It passed into the hands of Evert Bancker, surveyor, member of the Convention of Representatives of the State of New York, that is one of the legislators who had voted for the law in 1779. This individual acquired several of the properties which had been confiscated from the Loyalist and was without doubt one of a number of speculators at the time who enriched themselves by this means, several of them building immense fortunes.

On this subject, it is interesting to note, in a list of acquirers of the properties of Loyalists, sold at New York, in 1794, the name of Henry Ashdore (Astor), butcher, recently immigrated to New York, with his youngest brother, John Jacob, of Waldorf, city of the Duchy of Bade, in Germany. The latter was none other than John Jacob Astor, who became the richest American of his time. His immense fortune was accumulated in the fur trade, but it is possible that lucky speculations on the properties of the Loyalists was the means of launching him solidly into commerce, with assured capital.

William Kipp, the oldest of the sons of Benjamin Kipp who outlived him, made arrangements with the revolutionary party and the Government of the State of New York, in consequence, allowed him a quarter of the profit of the sale of the confiscated lands of his father.

The widow of Benjamin Kipp, Dorothy Davenport, survived him a long time and died the 3rd of September 1807, at the age of 92, after having been paralyzed for about 25 years.

And now that we have seen how the State of New York had taken possession of the property of Benjamin Kipp “..whether in Possession, Reversion or Remainder, held, or claimed by him⁽⁶⁾,” is one surprised that the children were excluded, a dozen years later, in 1795, from the act of dividing, which was the exclusion that convinced Frederick Ellsworth Kip, whom we saw in the preceding chapter, that Benjamin Kipp IV of North Castle could not be the son of Johannes Kip III, because his children were not mentioned in this act as eventual inheritors of Anneke Jans.

(1) J.R Broadhead, *Documents relative to the Colonial History of the State of New York*, Albany, 1857, Vol. VIII, p. 718.

(2) “The partisan corps called Cow-boys in the parlance of the country, was commanded by Colonel De Lancey. This gentleman, for such he was by birth and education, rendered himself very odious to the Americans by his fancied cruelty, though there is no evidence of his being guilty of any acts unusual in this species of warfare.” Note to the editor, *The Spy*, by James Fenimore Cooper, edition Hurd and Houghton, New York, 1872, p. 218.

(3) “...a number of Delancey’s most active officers as well as men under them were born and brought up in the vicinity. Captains Totten and Kipp came from North Castle just south of Greene’s Post and Knapp just north of it and all knew every foot of the ground and all the Loyalists living there...” Otto Hufeland, *Westchester County during the American Revolution, 1775-1783*, (White Plains, 1926), p. 381.

(4) *The McDonald Papers*, published by Judge Caleb Tompkins, in Publications of the Westchester Historical Society, (White Plains, 1927), gave several references on the subject of this affair. One reads there:

(Vol. V, p. 61) “Capt. Kipp (who left North Castle & joined the enemy) rode around to Mosier, d---d him & ordered him to surrender & commenced cutting him with his sword, when Mosier fired at him, the horse rear’d & was shot in the breast, he fell with Kipp’s thigh under him. The men fired & the horsemen ran off helter skelter through the fields. A negro (John Patterson) belonging to Capt. Sackett, who was with Mosier, sprang from the ranks & thrust his bayonet into Kipp.”

“After Moser went off, the enemy returned, procured a carriage & carried Kipp off who it was said recovered of his wound. The affair was published in the papers at the time...”

(Vol. V, p. 70) “...Holmes and Kipp promised quarter to the Americans if they surrendered but the answer returned was probably irritating, for Holmes drew his pistol and pointed it at Mosier, who at once gave a command that meant certain death to the Colonel and the pistol was dropped, while Kipp satisfied his anger and disappointment by abusing some of the privates whom he recognized, particularly a coloured man, who shortly before had been a prisoner under him at Morrisania. When he called him “a black rascal” John Patterson rushed out from his place in the square and thrust his bayonet into the Captain’s thigh, dodging his furious sword cut and getting back to his own place in

safety, only to be sharply reprimanded by his own officer. It was said the Captain's seat in the saddle was painful for some time."

(5) One finds also other mentions of the engagement at Harrison in the following sources:

- i. *Heath's Memories of the American War*, New York, 1904, p. 340.
- ii. *Public Papers of George Clinton*, Albany, 1899-1914, Vol. VII, p. 565.
- iii. *Historic Westchester*, 1683-1933, by Elizabeth Cushman, p. 109.
- iv. *Westchester County during the American Revolution, 1775-1783*, by Otto Hufeland, White Plains, 1926, p. 405.
- v. *History of Rye, 1660-1870*, by C.W. Baird, 1871, pp. 257-8.
- vi. "Argus," Tarrytown, New York, 24 January 1895.

(6) See the text in Appendix III, Chapter X.

Chapter III

In Nova Scotia

When England conceded the victory to the American revolutionary party and recognized the independence of the colonies, the loyalists were placed in a precarious situation. Most of the legislatures of the insurgent states had voted laws confiscating their property and the state of mind of the population of the states of the revolution in their respect was such that they could not think of living there.

Since 1782, it was apparent in America that the peace negotiations, taking place in Paris, between the American and English plenipotentiaries, would not include any relief for the Loyalists.

The representatives of the American congress consented to recommend to the various state governments the softening of the laws against the Loyalists and the restitution of their properties, but they were not at all willing to go any further, and the final treaty, signed at Paris, in 1783, by its article V, did nothing but confirm this attitude.

The State governments, supported by popular opinion, didn't do much with these recommendations, on the contrary, they applied their punitive laws more savagely than ever. The independence obtained gave them the necessary power and legalized the measures voted by the legislatures of the Revolutionary states, against the Loyalists, during the war.

For the great majority amongst them, there was no choice; they had to go into exile, because their lives were in danger. They had only a choice between several destinations.

Because of their sympathy and their loyalty towards British institutions, they looked particularly towards the American colonies where the English flag still flew, that is to say towards Canada or Quebec, Nova Scotia, Prince Edward Island, and the Island of the Bahamas.

Great Britain had promulgated the Quebec Act of 1774, which established the form of government under which the Province of Quebec would henceforth be governed, which comprised the territory of the Province of Ontario of today, as well as the Ohio Valley.

The American Loyalists, almost totally anti-papists, mistrusted several privileges accorded to the catholic clergy, by this constitution, at the same time they did not see in a good light the re-establishment, in this country of the French civil law which they did not know.

Their choice was directed particularly towards Nova Scotia, still sparsely populated and even depopulated, since the expulsion of the Acadians, in 1755. The name of Nova Scotia again applied to the ancient Acadia, that is to say that it included currently the Province of New Brunswick.

The English government offered free transport, provisions for a year, and a grant of 200 acres, to all Loyalist colonists who would relocate in this province. Agents came to New York to encourage emigration to Nova Scotia and made the advantages sparkle.

The Loyalists of the northern states also rallied to New York, which had been in the hands of the English armies during almost all of the duration of the war.

In the course of the military negotiations of the evacuation, the commander of the British forces of occupation, Sir Guy Carleton, refused to surrender the city to the Americans until the Loyalists wishing to go into exile had embarked on the ships for their destinations.

The first important contingent left New York in April 1783 for Nova Scotia and arrived at the mouth of the Saint John River, where these colonists founded St. John and, the following year the province of New Brunswick.

The American Loyalists immigrating to British North America were afterwards called United Empire Loyalists, a title which they and their descendants hold with much pride.

Samuel Kipp left New York the 1st of June 1783, with a party of the regiment of Westchester Light Horse who were lead, under the direction of the Captain Moses Knapp, of Yorktown, towards the County of Cumberland, on the Isthmus which connects the peninsula to New Brunswick.

He settled at Remsheg, today Wallace, Nova Scotia, a place which was also called Fanning's Burg, about 1786, in honour of Edmund Fanning.

The Captain Moses Knapp established himself also in the same place, with his family, and in 1785 he and Samuel Kipp each received the grant of 200 acres of land at Remsheg.

The Lieutenant-Colonel James De Lancey, commander of the battalion of the Westchester Light Horse, also called the battalion of the Westchester Refugees towards the end of the war, had left New York in 1782, and he settled at Annapolis, in Nova Scotia, the old Acadian site of Port Royal, He was elected deputy to the Legislature of Nova Scotia, and became a member of the Legislative Council of this province, in 1794. He died at Annapolis in 1804.

James and Thomas Kipp, the two brothers of Samuel Kipp who had also carried arms for the Loyalist cause, came to Nova Scotia about the same time as Samuel, if not with the same group.

Thomas Kipp settled at Digby. He had married Abigail Hatfield, sister of Colonel Isaac Hatfield of the Loyalist Volunteers of Westchester, and sister of Elizabeth Hatfield, the wife of Captain Moses Knapp.

James Kipp lost his life, a victim of drowning, shortly after his arrival in Nova Scotia. His wife Zipporah Carpenter, returned to live in the United States.

When the Loyalists had lost all hope of being compensated by the American states, for the losses which they had sustained, as the result of the seizing of their properties, they applied to the government of Great Britain, to obtain compensation. The latter judged it equitable to grant them that which the plenipotentiaries of Paris had not been able to obtain from the American Congress, by the peace treaty.

The English Parliament, in 1783, named a commission charged to do a survey of the losses sustained by the Loyalists and they invited them to make their claims in a stipulated time.

Samuel Kipp, on his part, had sustained, during the war, appreciable material losses. He had lost a quarter of the estate of 317 measures of Benjamin Kipp, at North Castle, which he had inherited, by virtue of the will of the later made at Morrisania, the 3rd of August 1780. He had also lost personal property, which included a negro slave, who had run away, horses and cattle. He also lost furniture in the burning of the house of a brother-in-law who could be identified.

The 9th of November 1783, he drafted a written claim, which he swore in, as required, before a certain James Law. This claim was entrusted to various persons, to be delivered to James De Lancey, the agent for the Loyalists of New York, in the time required to be conveyed directly to England, but it did not arrive at the destination and the time prescribed expired.

A new delay was granted, and in 1786, Colonel Jeremy Pemberton, one of the commissioners named by the government, came to receive the claims in America, and to make an inquiry on site.

The 15th of March 1786, at Halifax, in Nova Scotia, Samuel Kipp, drafted a new claim, of which one finds the full text in Appendix V, in Chapter X of the present work, by which he applied for a sum of 824 English pounds and 16 shillings, in compensation for his losses. This sum, expressed in the current currency of New York, was equivalent to, in 1786, 463 pounds, 19 shillings, sterling currency of England, the New York pound being valued only at 11 shillings, 3 pence, with regard to the pounds of London.

He valued his material losses as follows:

¼ part of a farm formerly the property of his late father Benjamin Kipp, valued at 2000 pounds at 8 shillings to the dollar	£500. 0.-
Two horses & a Colt lost on coming into the British lines	£ 70. 0.-
One Horse killed in action	£ 44.16.-
One Horse supplied to the army	£ 40. 0.-
One Horse & one cow taken by French Army	£ 33. 0.-
One Horse died in the service	£ 20. 0.-

Furniture	£ 20. 0.-
Two Horses left behind on leaving the farm	£ 47. 0.-
One Negro deserted to the Enemy	£ 50. 0.-
	£824.16.-

He supported his claim with a declaration, dated at Halifax, the 16th of March 1786, to the effect that he had been unable to lodge his claim before the expiration of the time first granted, because of circumstances out of his control. It was one of the required conditions, otherwise, in spite of the extensions granted, it was not accepted. All those were eliminated who had not taken the effort to attend to it before. Samuel Kipp had made a claim, in 1783, as we have already seen, but it was lost by the negligence of intermediaries.

The commissioners instructed to receive the claims of the Loyalists judged it appropriate to examine the claims themselves, personally, alone and then to corroborate the evidence via the witnesses that they questioned also behind closed doors.

Samuel Kipp appeared before the commissioner Pemberton, at Saint John, New Brunswick, the 30th of October 1786, at the same time as a group of Loyalists, former soldiers and officers of the Westchester Light Horse, established at Remsheg, had gathered.

The text of his deposition on this occasion was published, in full, in the 1904 report of the Archives of the Province of Ontario, and bore the number 623 of the commissioners files. It is reproduced in Appendix VI of Chapter X of the present study.

It asserted the value of the services that he had rendered to the British cause, and it revealed, among other things, that he had served without remuneration during the whole war, being for almost seven years.

He exhibited written evidence of his devotion and of his Loyalty and detailed afterwards the material losses that he had suffered.⁽¹⁾

His brother Thomas, came to Digby, corroborated the details on the subject of the estate of their father, and a witness, by the name of James Dickens, apparently originating from New York, himself, came to express his opinion on the value of the lands in the district of North Castle.

The government of Great Britain granted to the Loyalists, in general, between 30 and 40 percent of the amount claimed, after having cutting out the non approved items. Thus, in the case of Samuel Kipp, one must strike off the item of 50 pounds for the negroe slave deserted to the enemy.

He received on settlement of his claim, 178 pounds sterling, being 150 pounds for his lost inheritance, and 28 pounds in compensation for his other material losses.

Zipporah Carpenter, the widow of James Kipp drowned shortly after his arrival in Nova Scotia, claimed back from the English Government, as inheritor of the estate of her husband, the sum of 272 pounds, 13 shillings and 9 pence sterling. The same as Samuel Kipp, she claimed for the loss of the inheritance a quarter of the lands of Benjamin Kipp, which her husband, James Kipp, had benefited by virtue of the will of their father. They granted her 150 pounds sterling, the same amount they had granted to Samuel under this heading.

Thomas Kipp does not seem to have lodged a claim. He returned to live in the United States, afterwards, and was perhaps compensated by the state of New York in some fashion. He died at New York, the 1st of September 1823, and his widow, Abigail Hatfield, died in the same place, in 1839.

Shortly after their exile, the English Government granted army half-pay to the Loyalist officers and distributed food, clothing and blankets to the Loyalist colonist established in Nova Scotia and New Brunswick.

In 1787, Samuel Kipp obtained as additional compensation, a new grant of 500 acres of land, which gave him a total of 700 acres.

One could stop here and remember that these were the lands of the unfortunate Acadians, expelled from Acadia, by Lawrence, in 1755, that had been granted thus freely, thirty years later, to the Loyalists of the American Revolution. These two groups of exiles had suffered much but the Loyalists at least had the sympathy of the English Government and received a pecuniary support for the compensation of their material losses, whereas the Acadians were dispersed in a hostile country, to the four corners of the land, with no other resources but their courage.

The Loyalists established in Nova Scotia and in New Brunswick had great difficulty acclimatizing to the country. Coming from a climate much more temperate, they complained of the cold, the winter of 1786 to 1787 being particularly hard, and many of them complained also that they had not been able to cultivate sufficient to provide for their proper needs. This is why the English Government served out food rations during several years.

In 1787, Samuel Kipp married Mary Knapp (1766 – 1838), daughter of Captain Moses Knapp (1739 – 1833) who had conducted the group to Cumberland, in 1783, and his wife, Elizabeth Hatfield (1744 – 1815), sister of Colonel Isaac Hatfield, of Digby.

We remember that before the exile, Samuel Kipp had married Freelove Totten, of North Castle, and that the later as well as their four children did not follow him to Nova Scotia. We note that there were, among the Loyalists, numerous cases of second marriages of refugees having spouses in the United States. Numbers of Loyalists, irrevocably separated from their spouses who had refused to follow them into exile, availed themselves of the English law of 1760 which allowed a divorce after 3 years of desertion.

These second marriages were, in consequence perfectly legal and were celebrated in full knowledge of the cause, by the protestant clergy, as attested, moreover, by a historian of the Province of Nova Scotia, the judge Alfred William Savary. The latter cited the case of the Reverend Thomas Shreve, minister of the Anglican Church, who was remarried in such circumstances, that is to say, being divorced from a spouse living in the United States, and who was the father of three sons also ministers of the Anglican Church.⁽²⁾

The marriage of Samuel Kipp and Mary Knapp was civil celebration at Remsheg (also called Fanning's Burg), by James Stewart, a judge of the peace of the Strait of Canso, such as it appeared in a notarial declaration of Oliver Smith and his wife Elizabeth Knapp, sister of Mary, before the notary Nicolas Benjamin Doucet, at Montreal, the 11th of February 1836, in which Elizabeth Knapp declared to have been present at the marriage. The text of this declaration is reproduced in Appendix VII, in Chapter X of the present work.

The Knapp family lived, before the revolution, in the County Dutchess in the Province of New York, but they were originally from White Plains, then from the seigneurie of Courtlandt where Mary Knapp was probably born. The family of Mary Knapp, the wife of Samuel Kipp, is the subject of Chapter V of this work.

(1) Lorenzo Sabine, in *Biographical sketches of Loyalists of the American Revolution*, (Boston, edition 1864, 2 Vols.), made, on page 603 of the 1st volume, the following mention of Samuel Kipp: "Of West Chester County, New York. His family relations to the British Government, and his intimacy with Colonel De Lancey, are assigned as reasons for predisposing him to espouse the Royal cause. He raised a company of cavalry, and 'embarked all his interests in the contest.' He was a landholder and his soldiers were principally his own tenants. In charging a body of Whig troops, in West Chester County, in 1781, his horse was killed, and he was himself severely wounded. He survived the close of the war several years. His reputation was that of "an active and daring partisan officer." Sabine made an error when he qualified Samuel Kipp as a 'landholder.' He confused him with his father Benjamin Kipp. Samuel was not a property owner, otherwise he would have claimed as such in 1786.

(2) "...it appears that Rev. (Thomas) Shreve, father of two or three prominent Church of England ministers in this province (Nova Scotia), left a wife behind him, and married again here. I have found a great many instances where wives of Loyalists refused to follow their husband's fortunes, and returned to their own families when the latter espoused the Colonial cause, and the Loyalists on coming here married again."

"That the re-marriage of separated Loyalists in this country was deemed perfectly legal is clear from the fact that clergymen published such persons and married them in full knowledge of the facts. For the next generation or two the fact that one was born of a re-marriage of a man who had a wife living was covered up, but it is now coming to light,

and I have always felt curious to know by what authority such marriages were contracted here. Am satisfied there were separate divorces.”

Alfred William Savary, *The New York Genealogical and Biographical Record*, Vol. 29, (1898), 174.

Chapter IV

Montreal

Shortly after their marriage in 1787, Samuel Kipp, and his wife, left Nova Scotia, and their lands at Remsheg, imitating a considerable number of their exiled companions who, about this time abandoned this province to make their way to the richer lands of Lower Canada and Upper Canada.

This migratory movement, which was intensified when the English Government ceased the distribution of rations of food in 1787, took a particular fullness after the English Parliament granted a separate government to the Province of Upper Canada, by the constitution of 1791. It resulted in the rapid colonization of this province by the Loyalists.

But Samuel Kipp and his wife stopped in Lower Canada, the province of Quebec whose charm they appreciated.

Samuel Kipp, still suffering of the effects of the wound he had received in the engagement at Harrison, in 1781, had to abandon the hard work of the land. This is probably why he decided to leave his property of 700 acres in Nova Scotia, and tempt fortune in the cities of Lower Canada.

The biographies of James Kipp, their first child, said that he was born the 15th of March 1788, near Montreal, which indicates that Samuel Kipp and his wife proceeded directly to Montreal. But they went next to Quebec because it was in this city where they had baptized their first child, James, more than one year after, at the Anglican Church of Quebec by the Reverend Philip Toosey, the 30th of August 1789.

By 1790, a second son, called Samuel, after his father, saw light, probably at Quebec, although we cannot find a record of birth.

And the 27th of July 1791, it was a daughter, named Elizabeth, after the mother of Mrs. Kipp, Elizabeth Hatfield. For this child we could not find the record of birth either, but she was born in Quebec. It was she who declared it, 16 years later, when on the 13th of February 1808, two days before her marriage, she signed her record of baptism in the catholic faith, in the register of the Parish of Notre Dame, at Montreal.

We do not know how much time after the birth of their daughters the Kipps lived in Quebec. In 1796, they are in Montreal, where they finally settled down.

Captain Kipp now received the half-pay of a Captain in the English army and he provided for the needs of his growing family by establishing himself in business. In the Notarial records of the time, he is called merchant and trader, but the type of business in which he was occupied is not specified.

Their fourth and last child, a daughter named Charlotte, in honour of Charlotte Hughes, was born the 6th of July 1796 and was baptized, at the Anglican Church Christ Church, at Montreal, the 30th of August following.

The Kipp family lived in the district “la Côte à Baron,” that part of the city which comprises today the district bordered by the streets St. Hubert, Ontario, St. Urbain and Rachel. This is the same district that was called “le coteau Saint-Louis” as well as “la petite côte de la Visitation.”

Captain Moses Knapp, former officer of the “Westchester Light Horse,” and father-in-law of Samuel Kipp, also left his lands at Remsheg to go and settle at Montreal, with his family. We cannot specify the year of their arrival, but Elizabeth Knapp, sister of Mrs. Kipp, was at Montreal, with her husband, Oliver Smith, in 1803. It seems, nevertheless, that the rest of this family did not come until 1810.

One finds more details on the Knapp family in Chapter V of this volume.

Under the constitution of 1791, the Government of Quebec voluntarily conceded to the militia and the Loyalists considerable expanses of Crown land. Samuel Kipp, having the required qualifications, solicited a grant of land, for him and the members of his family. He did not think probably of resuming the cultivation of the land, but perhaps, much later, to establish his sons, still young or simply to make several happy speculations, as did many militia and Loyalists who resold their grants to the Canadian colonists.

To obtain these grants, there were long and complicated procedures to follow and various expenses to incur. An intermediary agent, named Joseph Bigelow offered to Samuel Kipp to make the necessary steps, in his name, and to pay the required fees, in return for one full moiety or half part of the lands which were granted to him. This onerous step for Kipp was nevertheless accepted, and the 29th of August 1801, he signed a contract to this effect, before the notary Jonathan Abraham Gray at Montreal.

But this affair dragged on at length and he did not live to see the conclusion.

Captain Kipp suffered always of his wound and at the beginning of the winter 1802-1803, his state of health worsened.

The 23rd of February 1803, he died at Montreal, leaving a young wife Mary Knapp, aged 37 years, as well as his four children, James, 13 years, Samuel, 12 years, Elizabeth, 11 years, and Charlotte, aged 6 years.

He died without, apparently, having seen again his own people living in the United States, which included his old paralyzed mother, Dorothy Davenport, widow of Benjamin Kipp, aged 88 years, who lived still in the County of Westchester.

His funeral took place two days later, the 25th of February 1803 and he was buried in the Anglican Cemetery of Montreal, as it appears in the record of interment following taken from the register of the church Christ Church:

“Samuel Kipp, formerly a captain in the British Army, living at Cote de Barron near Montreal died the twenty-third of February one thousand eight hundred and three and was buried the twenty-fifth following, Aged 47 years.

Signed J. Mountain
Rector.

Witnesses:

Signed Oliver Smith
Richard Stephens

The record said he was 47 years old but he had in reality 49 years, 2 months and 7 days.

The witnesses who had signed the record are, Oliver Smith, his brother-in-law, the husband of Elizabeth Kipp, and Richard Stephens, carpenter of Trois-Rivières, a friend of the family and probably a Loyalist. The minister is the Reverend Jehosaphat Mountain, eldest brother of the first Anglican Bishop of Quebec.

Samuel Kipp died without making a will and left very little property. His widow declared under oath, 17 years later, that he had unfortunately left her without resources.

More than three years after his death, the Government granted to Samuel Kipp, and to his family, in recognition of services rendered by the captain to the British Crown, 1,576 acres of crown land in the 7th line of the canton of Eardley, in the county of Ottawa, now the county of Hull, by letters patent dated August 1806. They granted 526 acres to Samuel Kipp himself, 210 acres to his wife Mary, and 210 acres to each of his children, James, Samuel, Elizabeth and Charlotte.

It was the grant that Samuel Kipp had demanded, for him and his family, two years before his death and he had committed to give half to the agent Bigelow.

These lands had at that time little value and did not have easy access. For a young widow of 40 years, with four young children, there was no question of going there and settling. And his sons who were advancing in age did not seem to have, moreover, much liking for the cultivation of the earth, at least, judging from their subsequent occupations.

After the death of Captain Kipp, his family left the quarter of the “Côte à Baron” to go and live in the district of the “Tanneries,” thus named because of the tannery of Charles Plessis Bélair, which was found there. It is today the Saint-Henri quarter, in Montreal.

The Kipp children left home very young. In 1808, at hardly 19 years, James, the oldest, had already gone to the Northwest. The same year, Elizabeth, at 16 years, married Médard Bruguière, of Assomption. At the same age, 5 years later, Charlotte married the

notary Joseph Désautels, of Montreal, and finally in 1814, Samuel Kipp son, was a merchant at Kingston, in Upper Canada.

James Kipp was married to Elizabeth Rocheleau, a catholic French Canadian, at Kingston, whereas Samuel married at Montreal, Marie Anne Gaudry, so that the four children of Captain Kipp of the Westchester Light Horse were more or less assimilated into the French Canadian race and many of the grand children were baptized in the catholic faith.

His two daughters, Elizabeth and Charlotte converted to the catholic religion and at their deaths were buried in the catholic cemetery of the city of Joliette, in the province of Quebec.

Thus finishes a second transition in the Dutch-Walloon family of Hendrick Hendricksen Kip who came to Amsterdam in 1637. His grand children born at New Amsterdam, that is at New York, had been assimilated into the English nation, and now the seventh generation, born in Canada, underwent a new transition and would be able to qualify in the future as a French Canadian family and Roman Catholic.

Once the children were married, Mrs. Kipp went to live with her brother and her father who still lived. Moses Knapp, the former Captain of the De Lancey Loyalists, died in 1833, at the age of 94 years, and his wife Elizabeth Hatfield had preceded him in 1815.

Mrs. Kipp had the comfort of having one of her daughters at Montreal, but the career of the notary Joseph Désautels was very brief, because he died at 32 years, in 1821, leaving Charlotte Kipp a widow at age 24.

After the death of her husband, Mrs. Kipp had solicited a pension as the widow of an officer of the army, of the English Government but these approaches had no result. She remembered again in 1820, no doubt at the suggestion of her son-in-law, the notary Désautels, and made new approaches to claim this pension, and in addition, the arrears from the death of the captain.

The 21st of December 1820, she presented a request, to Count Dalhousie, Governor-General, to claim her rights in this matter. The original of this document, written in English, is on deposit at the Public Archives of Canada in Ottawa. In the Appendix VIII of Chapter X, one finds the text which is interesting because of the details which it corroborates on the military career of her husband. There is an error as to the date of decease of Samuel Kipp, deceased, as we said, the 23rd of February 1803, and not on the 14th of February 1802, as she said in the text, but it was 1820, and Mrs. Kipp perhaps did not have a good memory for dates.

The result of these new approaches to the authorities remains unknown.

Mrs. Samuel Kipp and her children were always proprietors of the portion of Crown lands which they were granted in 1806, in the Canton of Eardley, which included the part of the late Samuel Kipp, which they had inherited legally.

The 22nd of February 1834, these lands were sold to William Cormack, merchant in Montreal, for the sum of 150 English pounds. The record of sale was signed before Joseph Hilarion Jobin, notary of Montreal, on this date, and there was no mention of the rights of the agent Bigelow, to who Samuel Kipp had promised half of the lands in 1801.

The record of sale mentioned below indicates that, as the Genealogical tree of Samuel Kipp demonstrates, Captain Samuel Kipp was married first to Freelove Totten, at North Castle, and that he had with her four children, the latter were not recognized as legal heirs of these properties in Canada.

The sale of these lands, at least for the part which had been granted properly to Samuel Kipp, was made by his widow Mary Kipp, as much in her name as in the name of her son James, absent from the Province, and by Marie Anne Gaudry, widow and heir of son Samuel Kipp, deceased, Charlotte Kipp, widow of Joseph Désautels, Elizabeth Kipp and her husband Médard Bruguière, who have declared to be inheritors of the properties of the succession of Samuel Kipp, dead intestate.

Mrs. Samuel Kipp, born Mary Knapp, died at Montreal the 5th of April 1838, aged 72 years, and was buried two days later in the protestant cemetery there.

The record of interment following appeared in the register of the Anglican Cathedral Christ Church, in Montreal.

“Mary Knapp, relict of the late Samuel Kipp, died on the fifth day of April, one thousand eight hundred and thirty eight aged seventy two years and was buried on the seventh following.”

By me,
(signed) John Bethune,
Rector.

Wintess present,
(signed) S. Wradley
N. Spoone

Chapter V

The Knapp Family

Moses Knapp IV (1739-1833), was Captain of the regiment of Loyalists of Westchester, as his son-in-law, Samuel Kipp, and arrived in Nova Scotia with his family in July 1783.

As well as having served in the Loyalist troops during the American War of Independence, he had taken part in prior campaigns, having enlisted in 1758 in a company of the New York Provincial militia.⁽¹⁾

He was a descendant, to the fourth generation, of Nicolas Knapp I (-1670), coming from England with his spouse, Eleanor Lockwood (-1658), and settling at Watertown, in Massachusetts, then later at Stamford, in Connecticut.

From this couple is descended Moses Knapp II (1642-), who married Abigail Westcott, and they had Moses Knapp III, the third generation.

This Moses Knapp III (1710-1795) married Elizabeth Ogden and settled at first at White Plains, then later in the manor of Cortlandt.

Moses Knapp IV, son of this couple, was born at White Plains, about 1739 (2). About 1765, he was married to Elizabeth Hatfield (1744-1815), born the 6th of January 1744 at White Plains, Province of New York, daughter of Isaac Hatfield III and his wife, Mary⁽²⁾.

The Hatfield family was of English and Puritan origin and are the subject of Chapter VI in the present study.

About 1771, Moses Knapp IV and his wife Elizabeth Hatfield IV settled down in Dutchess County, in the Province of New York, on 200 acres of land from Colonel Roger Morris from whom they procured a perpetual lease.

When the troubles exploded, the Morris family fell in with the Loyalist side and all their property was confiscated by the state of New York, which included the farm rented to Moses Knapp, who had crossed with the rest.

This Morris family was very rich and possessed large estates, and when the English government invited the Loyalist exiles to submit to them their claims for compensation of the losses suffered, that of the Morris family was one of the most important.

In Chapters II and III of the present study, we have seen what part Samuel Kipp V and his future father-in-law, Moses Knapp IV, took in the political and military events of the American Revolution, particularly as officers of the troops of De Lancey's "Westchester Light Horse," in which each had the rank of Captain.

In June 1783, Captain Moses Knapp was designated by Sir Guy Carleton to command a

detachment of the Loyalist battalion of Westchester, which had to go and settle in the County of Cumberland, in Nova Scotia.

The family of Moses Knapp, who had found refuge in the City of New York, during the war, joined with the detachment of this battalion and left for exile in Nova Scotia, with several other families of officers of the battalion. We know meanwhile that Captain Samuel Kipp left alone, with this group.

They landed at the River Saint-John where we know that in 1783 lots no. 258 and 259 in Carleton (much later Saint-John West) were granted to Moses Knapp.

But the group proceeded next to the County of Cumberland, such that after the initial project, and in October 1786, we find Moses Knapp and his family settled down at the River Remsheg, where Remsheg (today Wallace, Nova Scotia), also called Fanning's Burg, about this time, because of Colonel Edmund Fanning who had received a grant of 800 acres in this place, in 1787.

We have seen that Samuel Kipp V, son of Benjamin Kipp IV, of North Castle, and of Dorothy Davenport, married Mary Knapp, daughter of Moses Knapp IV and of Elizabeth Hatfield, in 1787. Samuel Kipp was Captain of a regiment of Loyalists of Westchester and settled down with the group of officers of this regiment at Remsheg, where he had received a grant.

The brother of Samuel, Thomas Kipp, who settled at Digby, allied with this family by marrying Abigail Hatfield, youngest sister of Mrs. Moses Knapp (born Elizabeth Hatfield), and of Colonel Isaac Hatfield, of Digby.

The 30th of October 1786, Captain Moses Knapp appeared before Commissioner Pemberton, at Saint-John, to support his claim of 734 pounds, 16 shillings representing the material losses which he had suffered during the American Revolution, by reason of his Loyalty to England. The text of this testimony is reproduced in Appendix IX of Chapter X of this volume.

The English Government poured out to him subsequently the sum of 268 pounds in settlement of this claim.

The Knapp family lived for several years in Nova Scotia and New Brunswick. Although they were apparently settled in the County of Cumberland, the Archivist of the New Brunswick Museum, at Saint-John, says that Moses Knapp received a grant in 1785 on the River Hammond and that he claimed it in 1792. He declared that this Moses Knapp was indeed the Captain of the regiment of Westchester and that he had also served in the Volunteers of New York, but he added that he had died in 1800, which is not in agreement with the information that we possess.

The 16th of August 1800, at Saint-John, a certain Moses Knapp lodged his will, by which he leaves all of his property to his wife, Elsey Knapp. Is this then our individual and this

“Elsy” is she really Elizabeth Hatfield?

It is perhaps on this will that the Archivist mentioned before based the placing of the death of our Moses Knapp in 1800.

The text of this will is in Appendix X of Chapter X.

The Knapps appear to have returned to the United States about this time because the 27 of December 1802, at New York, in Trinity Church, on Broadway, the marriage of Elizabeth Knapp, youngest sister of Mary, to Oliver Smith took place.

This young couple is nevertheless at Montreal, the following year, in 1803⁽³⁾, but it seems that the other members of this family did not come to Montreal until much later, towards 1809 or 1819.

The Knapps settled down in the suburb of Saint-Laurent in Montreal, and we find their names mentioned frequently, from then on, in the records of the notaries Joseph Désautels and Joseph Hilarion Jobin who became related to the Knapps.

Mrs. Moses Knapp IV, born Elizabeth Hatfield, died at Montreal, the 29th of May 1815, and was interred the 31st of the same month, such as it appears in the following extract of the register of the Anglican Church Christ Church, of Montreal.

“On the twenty ninth day of May, One thousand eight hundred and fifteen, Elizabeth wife of Moses Knapp late captain in the Light Dragoons, died and was buried on the thirty first following.

By me.

(Signed) J. Mountain, Minister

The witnesses are Joseph Desautels, and William Kane, who have here unto signed their names.

(Signed) Jos. Desautels
Will'm. Kane”

Joseph Desautels, witness to the record above is the husband of Charlotte Kipp, granddaughter of Madame Knapp.

It is through the marriage contract of this couple passed before the notary Thomas Barron, in Montreal, the 17th of June 1813, that we can establish the identity of Elizabeth Hatfield, wife of Moses Knapp IV.

In the record mentioned above, Moses Knapp is called “late captain in the Light Dragoons.” We remember that he had served in the “Westchester Light Horse,” a corps in effect composed of dragoons.

Moses Knapp IV died at Montreal the 16th of August 1833 and was interred the 19th of

the same month. The record of his interment said he was aged 91 years.

Abraham Hatfield said that Moses Knapp was 19 years old when he enlisted in the Provincial militia of New York in 1758, which would have him born about 1739 and would give him an age of 94 at his death.

We find the record of his interment in the register of the Anglican Church Christ Church, of Montreal, as follows:

“Moses Knapp, half pay captain of the West India Regiment, died on the sixteenth day of August one thousand eight hundred and thirty-three aged ninety one years and was buried on the nineteenth following.

By me,

(Signed) John Bethune, Rector.”

The minister officiating had written “West India” for West Chester” but the registers abound in errors on details of this type.

The record indicates that Moses Knapp received the half pay of a captain at retirement. This is confirmed at the National Archives of Canada, in Ottawa, where we find a list of officers disbanded in 1783-1784 and paid by the commissariat from the 1st of January 1828 which includes the name of Moses Knapp, Captain in the Westchester Loyalists. This document confirms also that this officer is deceased the 16th of August 1833, as mentioned above.

In a request to the Governor, dated 1820, Mary Knapp, widow of Samuel Kipp, mentioned that her father received the half pay of a Captain since the disbanding of the corps of the Westchester Loyalists.⁽⁴⁾

Moses Knapp IV and Elizabeth Hatfield IV had the following children:

- i. Mary, born about 1766; married in 1787 to Samuel Kipp; deceased the 5th of April 1838.
- ii. Elizabeth, born the 30th of November 1770; married the 27th of December 1802 to Oliver Smith; deceased the 10th of December 1845.
- iii. Moses, born the 14th of March 1777; 1. married to Catherine Felt; 2. married the 18th of April 1818 to Sarah Brewner; deceased the 22 of January 1839.
- iv. Daniel.

No. 1 Mary Knapp V 1766 – 1838

Mary Knapp, eldest daughter of Moses Knapp IV and of Elizabeth Hatfield, was born about 1766, probably at Yorktown, in the manor of Cortlandt, Province of New York. About 1787, at Fanning’s Burg or Remsheg, in Nova Scotia, she married Samuel Kipp V, son of Benjamin Kipp IV and of Dorothy Davenport, before James Stewart, justice of the peace of the Strait of Canso.

Elizabeth Knapp, youngest sister of Mary, witnessed this ceremony and it is probable that other members of the Kipp, Knapp and Hatfield families exiled to Nova Scotia were also present.

Since Mary Knapp is the spouse of the subject of this study, it suffices to say here that she died at Montreal, the 5th of April 2838, and defer the reader to Chapters III, IV and VII for the other details on the life of this lady.

No. 2 Elizabeth Knapp V 1770 – 1845

Elizabeth Knapp, daughter of Moses Knapp IV and Elizabeth Hatfield IV, was born the 30th of November 1770, either in the County of Dutchess or at Yorktown, in the Manor of Cortlandt, Province of New York. It is from the record of baptism, in the register of the Anglican Church Christ Church, in Montreal, on the date of 16 of June 1827, that we establish the date of birth. The text of this record follows:

“Elizabeth Knapp = wife of Olive Smith, of the Parish of Montreal, farmer – was born on the 30th day of November 1779 – and was baptized on the 16th day of June 1827, by me. (Signed) John Bethune, Rector.

In the registers of the Church of the Trinity, Broadway Street, in New York, on the date of the 27th of December 1802, we find a record of the marriage of Oliver Smith to Elizabeth Knapp⁽⁵⁾.

It is without doubt the discharge of their marriage, which was probably contracted civilly at Remsheg, in Nova Scotia, in the absence of a protestant minister, before the year 1791, since it is about that year that their son Richard was born.

This case of Religious rehabilitation of a marriage contracted in exile, on returning to a country, is almost analogous to the rehabilitated marriages of the Acadians at Assomption in 1767.

Oliver Smith was born the 10th of April 1760, as it appears in the record of his baptism, made, as in the case of his wife, many years later, at the church Christ Church, at Montreal, the 28th of June 1826.

He died in Montreal, the 22nd of February 1837, at the age of 76 years, 8 months and 12 days, and was interred the 25th of that month, according to the register of the same church.

His spouse survived him by several years. The 4th of June 1830, she deposited her will before the notary Nicolas Benjamin Doucet, of Montreal – number 1778 of his records – and the 20th of June 1837, after the death of her husband, she added a codicil in which she made mention of her son, Richard Smith, and of her grand son, George Smith.

Elizabeth Knapp died in Montreal, the 10th of December 1845, and was interred the 12th of the same month, according to the record of interment in the register of the church

Christ Church.

Oliver Smith and Elizabeth Knapp had:

- i. Richard, born about 1791; married to Hannah Wurtele; deceased.

No. 3 Moses Knapp V 1777 – 1839

Moses Knapp V, son of Moses Knapp IV and of Elizabeth Hatfield, was born the 14th of March 1777, in the County of Dutchess in the Province of New York, according to the following extract of the register of the church Christ Church:

“Moses Knapp, of Montreal Gentleman, was born on the fourteenth day of March 1777, in Dutchess County State of New York, and was baptized on the thirteenth day of July 1838, by me
(Signed) John Bethune, Rector.”

He was a contract carpenter and mason and had considerable dealings, as judged by the numerous records of sales of properties in which his name appears in the court records of the notaries of Montreal of the time.

His first wife was named Catherine Felt, or Felts, and was probably originally from New York, even though we have not found the place or date of their marriage. She gave him four children, of which three attained an adult age, and she died at Montreal, at the age of 35 years, the 12th of August 1811, at the birth of her last child. The record of her interment is on the date of the 14th of August in the register of the Presbyterian church of Saint-Gabriel Street, in Montreal.

To conform to the demands of the required legal procedures, in keeping with the belongings of minors, Moses Knapp had to convene a family council, after the death of his wife, to put in order certain details of heritage and to name a guardian and a deputy guardian to his minor children, James, 10 years, William, 8 years, and Joseph, 6 years, as must have been done in a similar case.

The 27th of February 1816, Moses Knapp, grandfather, James Kipp and Oliver Smith, uncles, and Richard Smith, cousin of the minor children witnessed the choice of Moses Knapp as guardian and of James Kipp as deputy guardian.⁽⁵⁾

As a second wedding, Moses Knapp married Sarah Brewner, or Bruner, born about 1779 and probably the widow of Jacob Wurtele⁽⁷⁾, the 18th of April 1818, at the Presbyterian Church of Saint-Gabriel Street, in Montreal. She gave him a son but died one month after the birth of the child. She died at 40, the 13th of August 1819 and was interred the next day, in Montreal.

The 28th of June 1828, Moses Knapp V had the sorrow of losing his second son, William, drowned accidentally while swimming in the port of Montreal with some friends.⁽⁸⁾

Moses Knapp V died at Montreal, the 22 of January 1839 and was interred the 25th, such as it appears in the register of the church Christ Church.

Several days after his decease, being the 2nd of February 1839, a new family council met, this time to name a guardian and deputy guardian for Henry Bruner Knapp, then aged 20 years. Among the relatives present, there were James Knapp, the brother of the minor, and Richard Smith, his cousin. It is William Mittleburger who is named guardian and Richard Smith deputy guardian.⁽⁹⁾

We have not been able to establish the identity of William Mittleburger, neither his level of friendship or relationship with the Knapp family but he appears to be linked to them intimately.

From his will, given before Nicolas Benjamin Doucet, notary of Montreal, the 17th of November 1838, Moses Knapp bequeathed his residence to his minor son, Henry Bruner Knapp,⁽¹⁰⁾ and the residue of his property to his two other sons James and Joseph.

On this same day of 2 February 1839, James and Joseph Knapp accepted the inheritance of their father, Moses Knapp, under benefit of inventory, a procedure which establishes that on this date Joseph Knapp was resident in the state of New York, in the United States.⁽¹¹⁾

The 4th of February 1839, in the house of the deceased testator, at coteau Saint Louis, and before the notary Doucet already named, one proceeded with the inventory of the estate of Moses Knapp, in the presence of a cousin, Peter Rutherford, and of James Knapp, acting “as much for himself as for the absent Joseph Knapp, his brother merchant living in the city of New York both legitimate heirs of the late Moses Knapp, their father, “ by virtue of a procurement of Joseph Knapp in favour of his brother⁽¹²⁾, made in the presence of Sylvester Spencer, notary public of New York, and dated the 7th (?) of February 1839.

The inventory of the estate does not have any historical interest but there was a library of about 90 volumes, valued at 9 English pounds, and containing, among others, a copy of “Smith’s on the Wealth of Nations.” Also, among his personal old clothes, a green bottle coat.

The issue of the first marriage of Moses Knapp V and of Catherine Felts:

- 6 i. James, born the 31st of January 1806⁽¹³⁾.
- 7 ii. William, born the 7th of February 1808⁽¹⁴⁾; drowned the 28th of June 1828 and interred the 30th of the same month (Christ Church).
- 8 iii. Joseph, born the 11th of December 1809⁽¹⁵⁾; married the 1st of June 1854 to Anne McTavish; deceased the 13th of February 1858.
- 9 iv. Anonymous, born and interred the 12th of August 1811. (Register of the church Notre Dame at Montreal.)

From the second marriage of Moses Knapp V and Sarah Brewner issued:

- 10 i. Henry Bruner, born the 14th of July 1819 and baptized the 4th of August 1819 (Christ Church); deceased unmarried, the 23rd of July 1851 and interred the 25th, in the Catholic Cemetery (Register of the church Notre Dame of Montreal)⁽¹⁶⁾.

No.4 Daniel Knapp V

Daniel Knapp, son of Moses Knapp IV and Elizabeth Hatfield IV is known to us by a record of sale of Moses Knapp et al., to Robert Algie, dated the 30th of June 1815, in the records of notary Joseph Désautels, of Montreal⁽¹⁷⁾.

He resided in the state of New York and he is mentioned in this record as the legal heir of Elizabeth Hatfield, his mother.

No. 5 Richard Smith 1791 –

Richard Smith, son of Oliver Smith and of Elizabeth Knapp, was born about 1791, probably at Remsheg, in Nova Scotia, or New Brunswick, and was baptized the 18th of August 1804, at the Anglican Church Christ Church, in Montreal.

About 1814, he married Hannah Wurtele, daughter of George Wurtele, who gave him at least eight children.

In 1820, Richard Smith is a farmer at the coast Saint Catherine, near Montreal, whereas in 1824, he is called a tavern keeper at Saint Laurent.

Richard Smith and Hannah Wurtele baptized the following children at the Anglican Church Christ Church at Montreal:

- 11 i. George ⁽¹⁸⁾, born the 17th of October and baptized the 5th of November 1815.
- 12 ii. Eleanor Elizabeth, born the 27th of March and baptized the 9th of April 1818.
- 13 iii. Margaret, born the 23rd of September and baptized the 7th of October 1820.
- 14 iv. Richard Pierce, born the 5th of May and baptized the 6th of June 1824.
- 15 v. William Oliver ⁽¹⁹⁾, born the 13th of May and baptized the 17th of June 1827.
- 16 vi. Hannah Sophie, born the 3rd of January and baptized the 31st of January 1830.
- 17 vii. Cordelia ⁽²⁰⁾, born the 16th of November and baptized the 4th of December 1832; deceased the 17th and interred the 19th of March 1839 (Christ Church).
- 18 viii. Edward Knapp Wurtele ⁽²¹⁾, born the 18th of February and baptized the 11th of May 1837.

No. 8 Joseph Knapp VI 1809 – 1858

Joseph Knapp VI, son of Moses Knapp V and of Catherine Felt, was born the 11th of December 1809. At the time of the death of his father, in 1839, he was a merchant at New York, but he appears to have returned to Montreal about 1846.

From 1846 to 1850 he was associated, in Montreal, with John Young and Benjamin

Holmes, rich merchants well know at the time.

The 31st of May 1854, before T. Doucet, notary of Montreal, he signed a contract of marriage with Annie McTavish, underage daughter of Duncan McTavish and of Helen Burnett, of Inverness, Scotland, which was authorized by her guardian, Hugh Taylor, of Long Point.

The marriage took place the next day, 1 June 1854, at the church Christ Church, at Montreal, and they had the following children:

- 19 i. Helen Elizabeth Ann, born the 8th of February 1855 and baptized the 20th of April 1855 (Christ Church).
- 20 ii. Edward William, born the 4th of January 1856 and baptized the 20th of March 1856 at St. Andrew Presbyterian Church, at Montreal.

Joseph Knapp died at New York, the 13th of February 1858 and was interred at Montreal (Christ Church) the 18th of February following.

He died without leaving a will⁽²²⁾ and they proceeded to the inventory of his estate the 9th of March 1858 before the notary T. Doucet. The 15th of March 1858, his widow, acting as guardian of their minor children, gave proxy to Peter McEwen, before the same notary, and this is the last mention that we have of this family.

(1) According to Mrs. Flora Knapp Dickinson, New York genealogist and secretary of the Knapp Family association, in the United States.

(2) Abraham Hatfield, *The Hatfields of Westchester*, Rutland, Vermont, 1935, page 39.

(3) Oliver Smith is witness to the interment of Samuel Kipp, the 25th of February 1803, and in August 1804 he baptized a child at the church Christ Church, at Montreal.

(4) See the Appendix VIII, Chapter X.

(5) *Records of Trinity Church Parish of New York City*, New York Genealogical and Biographical Record, Vol. LXXIX, No. 3, July 1948, page 149.

(6) Petition of Moses Knapp, Jr., widower of Catherine Felts, Record of Guardianship No. 92, 27 February 1816 – Judiciary Archives of the district of Montreal.

(7) Register of the Anglican church Christ Church, of Montreal, on the date of the 28th of November 1796, we find the marriage of Jacob Wurtele, 26 years, to Sarah Bruner, 18 years.

(8) Unfortunate Accident – Last Saturday about 5 o'clock in the evening, Mr. William Knapp, son of Mr. Moses Knapp, was drowned while bathing with three of his friends

near the little islet in the port of this city. This young man was very well known to most of the merchants of Saint Paul Street, having kept shop himself for three or four years next to the old market. He has studied medicine for several years under Dr. Neilson. He is badly missed by a large number of friends who appreciated the goodness of his character and the regularity of his conduct, and also by his family which his unfortunate end has plunged into a very bitter sorrow.

He was 22 years of age. (“LA MINERVE,” Montreal, 30 June 1828).

(9) Record of Guardianship No. 70 Minors Moses Knapp, 2 February 1839, Judiciary Archives of Montreal.

(10) “I give and bequeath to my son Henry issue of marriage with the late Sarah Bruner my last wife all that farm or lot of land situated in the said parish petite Côte de la Visitation containing about twenty superficial acres on which I make my present residence with the outhouses buildings and dependences thereon erected....subject to the payment of one hundred pounds currency to extinguish a debt of the same amount due to Mrs. Charlotte Kipp widow of the late Joseph Desautel.” Extract of the will of Moses Knapp, 17 November 1838, N.B. Doucet, N.P., Montreal, Record No. 81-25740.

One other clause of this will stipulates that Henry Knapp must not dispose of this property until having attained the age of 25 years.

(11) See: Letters of benefit of inventory, James Knapp et al., 2 February 1839, Record of Guardianship No. 93, Judicial Archives of the District of Montreal.

(12) Inventory of the Estate of Moses Knapp, court record of N.B. Doucet, 4 February 1839, No. 199-25858.

(13) According to a record in the register of the church Christ Church, at Montreal, dated the 31st of August 1826.

(14) Ibid.

(15) Ibid.

(16) The will of Henry Bruner Knapp is attested before L.S. Martin, notary of Montreal, the 22 of July 1851 – Number 1028 of his records. It makes a bequest to Dame Marguerite Saint Germain widow of Jacob Wurtele, in whose house he died the 23rd July and to Mr. Ignace Bourget, bishop of Montreal. The inventory of his belongings is also recorded by L.S. Martin, N.P., dated 29 July 1851 – Number 1033

(17) Here is an extract from this record:

“Before the undersigned Notaries residing in the City & District of Montreal Province of Lower Canada, Personally appeared Moses Knapp of St. Lawrence Suburb near the City Esq. Moses Knapp Junior master carpenter and joiner Mrs. Mary Knapp Widow of the late Samuel Kipp Esq. Also of St. Lawrence Suburb Mr. Oliver Smith of the Coste de la Visitation Parish of Montreal & Mrs. Elizabeth Knapp his wife by him duly authorized to

the effect of these presents the said Moses Knapp Senior & Moses Knapp junior acting for themselves & for Daniel Knapp residing in the state of New York who voluntarily acknowledged & confessed by these presents to have bargained sold assigned transferred to Robert Algie of St. Michael Parish of the Sault au Recollet a piece of land situated at St. Michel without any exception or reservation on the part of the said sellers who are lawfully seized to wit the said Moses Knapp Esq. The one undivided half for his right of community that has existed between him and the late Mrs. Elizabeth Hatfield his wife & to the other vendors as the sole heirs of the said Mrs. El. Hatfield their mother & to the said Moses Knapp Senior as having acquired the same from Mr. Oliver Smith by deed passed & executed before the Late Lewis Chaboillez Notary

(18) The sponsors are George Wurtele and Oliver Smith.

(19) The guardians are Josias Wurtele Jr., William Knapp and Hannah Pierce, the later the daughter of Joseph Pierce, merchant of New York, and of Mary Smith, born the 15th of November 1777, according to the register of the church Christ Church, 16 June 1827. The Pierces were intimate friends of the Knapp family.

(20) Guardian: James Knapp.

(21) Godmother: Mary Kipp.

(22) Record of Guardianship No. 113, Joseph Knapp, 26 February 1858, Judiciary Archives of the district of Montreal.

Chapter VI

The Hatfield Family

Abraham Hatfield, member of the New York Genealogical and Biographical Society, published in 1935 a genealogical work entitled "The Hatfields of Westchester" in which he relates the history of the Hatfield family, which he had compiled with the aid of expert collaborators.

This family interests us particularly because of Elizabeth Hatfield (1744-1815), wife of Moses Knapp IV, parents of Mary Knapp, wife of Samuel Kipp V.

The history of the Hatfield family begins with Thomas Hatfield, English Puritan exiled in Holland and established at Leyden, a University town in the Low Countries.

The 17th of April 1621, in Leyden, we find the bans of marriage of Thomas Hadvelt (Hatfield), wool carder, come from England, to Anne Hentem (Hamden) widow of Valentin Oocxs (Cox). They were married the 1st of May 1621 and they were still at Leyden in 1624.

It is their son Thomas, born in Holland about 1627, who we find at New Amsterdam in 1665, then at Mamaroneck. After the 26th of November 1671, this Thomas Hatfield I married Alice Ebel, baptized the 16th of October 1650, at the Dutch Reformed Church of New Amsterdam, widow of William Trotter and daughter of Peter Ebel and Clara Hendricus. Thomas Hatfield I and Alice Ebel had at least five children of which the fourth, Peter Hatfield II was the continuation of the line which interests us.

Born at Mamaroneck and baptized at the Dutch Church of New York, the 31st of March 1683, Peter Hatfield II married Elizabeth Travis, of White Plains, about 1710.

In spite of industrious research, Abraham Hatfield was not able to determine to which family of Travis his ancestor belonged.

Peter Hatfield II and Elizabeth Travis were the parents of Isaac Hatfield III, born at Mamaroneck about 1713.

This Isaac Hatfield III married a woman for whom we only have a first name Mary, her surname, in the absence of registers, remains unknown. They had 4 sons and 7 daughters who were the Loyalists ancestors of almost all of the Hatfields of Nova Scotia and New Brunswick today.

This family of Loyalists produced many descendants and one finds the name Hatfield often in the Maritime Provinces, particularly in the area of St. John.

From the work of Abraham Hatfield, "The Hatfields of Westchester," we summarize below details of this family, of which the eldest was the mother of the wife of Samuel Kipp:

- i. Elizabeth, baptized the 6th of January 1744, at White Plains; deceased at Montreal, the 29th of May 1815; married to Moses Knapp.
- ii. Daniel, baptized the 22nd of November 1745 in the County of Westchester; married in 1775 to Mary Drake, who followed him into exile; deceased the 11th of February 1825, and interred the 14th, at Hatfield Point, county of Belle-Isle, New Brunswick. They had 12 children.
- iii. Isaac, born the 28th of October 1747, in Westchester; Colonel of Loyalist militia; married four times and came to Nova Scotia with his second wife, Martha Willett, and settled at Digby; deceased the 3rd of January 1822. His testimony before the Commission is in Appendix XI, Chapter X⁽¹⁾.
- iv. Mary, born the 5th of November 1749; married to Daniel Ward, New York Loyalist settled at St. John, in 1784.
- v. Jane, born the 13th of November 1751; married to Gabriel (Gilbert) Fowler, New York Loyalist, son of Caleb Fowler, of North Castle, County of Westchester, and Anna Miller; deceased the 19th of April 1840, in Hampton, New Brunswick.
- vi. Sarah, born the 24th of December 1753.
- vii. Amy (or Emme) , born the 25th of December 1755; married to John Kennedy, New York Loyalist, shipwrecked with the transport “Martha,” in June 1783, and saved by fishing boats and finally settled at St. John.
- viii. Abigail, born the 1st of November 1756; married to Thomas Kipp, brother of Samuel Kipp; deceased at New York in 1839.
- ix. Abraham, born the 7th of January 1760; married to Sarah Lawrence; exiled to New Brunswick in 1783 with the other members of this family but returned to New York in 1810.
- x. Hepzibah, born the 16th of October 1761; married to John Wetmore Lamson, son of Rev. Joseph Lamson; They lived in Stratford, Connecticut.
- xi. David, born the 25th of May 1763; married to Ann Garrison; settled at St. John where he raised a family of 11 children; deceased at St. John, the 1st of December 1843.

(1) Lorenzo Sabine, in “*Biographical Sketches of Loyalist of the American Revolution, with an Historical essay*,” Boston, 1864, Vol. I, pp. 522-3, said what follows of Isaac Hatfield; “Of New York. He was Lieutenant-Colonel and Commandant of the Loyal Westchester Volunteers. In January 1780, about one o’clock in the morning, a party of Whigs attacked him, and drove him and his men into his quarters, when, from the chambers and other rooms, they kept up a fire upon their assailants, until a straw bed was et in flames. As the building burned, the inmates escaped at the windows. The Colonel, three of his officers, and eleven privates, were taken prisoners. At the peace he went to St. John, New Brunswick, and was a grantee of that city. He subsequently settled in Digby, Nova Scotia, and lived there thirty-six years until his decease. He died in 1822, aged seventy-four.”

Chapter VII

The Descendants of Samuel Kipp and Mary Knapp

Samuel Kipp V and Mary Knapp V had four children, all born in Lower Canada, who for the most part married French Canadians.

They are:

2 i. James, born the 15th Mar 1788; married four times; deceased the 2nd July 1880, at Parkville, Clay County, State of Missouri, United States.

3 ii. Samuel, born about 1790; married the 21st November 1814 to Marie Anne Caundry; deceased the 20th November 1830.

4 iii. Elizabeth, born the 27th July 1791; married the 15th February 1808 to Médard Brugière; deceased the 1st March 1870.

5 iv. Charlotte, born the 6th July 1796; married the 20th June 1813 to Joseph Desautels; deceased the 25th July 1889.

No. 2 James Kipp VI 1788 – 1880

James Kipp VI, oldest son of Samuel Kipp V and Mary Knapp V, was born the 15th March 1788, near Montreal and died at Parkville, in the State of Missouri, United States, the 2nd July 1880, at the advanced age of 92 years, 3 months and 17 days.

He was one of the pioneers of business in the fur trade with the red skins in the old French territory of Louisiana, which later became the American Far West. His life and his adventures are the subject of Chapter VIII of this study.

He was married several times but we only know of four children. It is highly probable that he had others but this is all that we know about his progeny.

Children of James Kipp and of Elizabeth Rocheleau:

6 i. Mary Ann, born ??; married the 3rd October 1843 to Louis Gustave de Lorimier, at Assomption; deceased the 29th August 1865, at St. Hyacinthe and buried the 1st September 1865, in the cemetery of the Cote de Neiges, at Montreal.

7 ii. Louise Charlotte, born the 10th August 1815, at Montreal, and baptized the 11th August 1815 at Notre Dame of Montreal; married to Weagant.

Children issuing from James Kipp and one or the other of his marriages with the savages of the West:

8 i. Joseph, born at Fort Union; married to a savage; deceased the 10th December 1913, at Browning, Montana.

9 ii. Samuel, born ??; deceased before 1868.

No. 3 Samuel Kipp VI 1790 – 1830

Samuel Kipp VI, second son of Samuel Kipp V and Mary Knapp V, was probably born in Quebec about 1790, because he was older than Elizabeth, born in 1791. Samuel VI was 21 years old in 1814.

Like his brother and his sisters, he left the paternal home very young and in 1814 was a merchant at Kingston, in Upper Canada, where his brother James was settled down and had found a wife in 1813.

During the War of 1812-1815, Kingston became a military base for the Provincial Marines serving in the defense of the great lakes and the commercial development of this city which afterwards attracted the Kipp brothers to this place.

It is at Montreal, however, that Samuel Kipp went to find his wife. The 20th November 1814, before Thomas Barron, notary of Montreal, he signed a marriage contract with Marie Anne Gaudry, born the 6 September 1795, at Montreal, and baptized the next day, at the church of Notre Dame, daughter of Louis Amable Gaudry and Marie Anne Houé dit (nicknamed) Jolicoeur.

The marriage took place the next day, 21st November, at the church of Notre Dame, in Montreal.

Their first six children were baptized at the church of Notre Dame in Montreal and in several of the baptisms the parents were said to be from Kingston. However, by the 1825 census, the family was living in the suburb of St. Laurent, in Montreal.

Towards the end of this period, the government undertook the construction of the Rideau Canal and Samuel Kipp moved his enterprise to the new center of commerce, which was developing at the head of the canal, at Bytown.

He was one of the fourteen citizens of Bytown who were chosen, by the unanimous vote of the people present, the 7th September 1828, to form a committee charged with the construction of a Catholic church in this town. He was also instructed, along with a Mr. Joyce, to collect subscriptions, in the lower town, of Rideau Street to the Canal.⁽¹⁾

The 6th October 1828, Mr. Kipp and Mr. Saint-Louis were instructed to look after the construction of a quicklime kiln to serve in the construction of the church⁽²⁾.

Samuel Kipp died prematurely at Montreal the 20th November 1830, according to a notice of his death appearing in the newspaper “La Minerve” of Montreal about this date. The notice said that Mr. Kipp was a merchant at Bytown but there was no mention of the place of interment.

It is probable that he was interred at Bytown, where his family lived afterwards. A large part of the register for the year 1830 is missing from the archives of the parish of Notre Dame of Bytown, today The Basilica of Ottawa, so one is unable to affirm where his remains rest.

Samuel Kipp VI and Marie Anne Gaudry had seven children, as follows:

10 i. Amable Samuel, born the 4th September 1815 and baptized the same day at Notre Dame, in Montreal; buried the 29th February 1816, in Montreal.

11 ii. Marie Anne, born the 18th and baptized the 20th January 1817, at Notre Dame, Montreal; married the 15th July 1833 to Hubert Rouleau, at Notre Dame, Montreal.

12 iii. Samuel, born the 3rd and baptized the 4th December 1819, at Notre Dame, Montreal; buried the 5th December 1825, in Montreal.

13 iv Jacques (James) , born the 30th April 1822 and baptized the same day, at Notre Dame, Montreal; buried the 15th May 1822, in Montreal.

14 v Augustin Wulfhild (Wilfrid) , born the 10th November 1823 and baptized the same day at Notre Dame, Montreal; married the 17th January 1854 to Helena Kelley, at Notre Dame, Bytown; buried.

15 vi Marguerite Rose, born the 26th and baptized the 27th May 1827 at Notre Dame, Montreal; buried the 31st July 1827, at Notre Dame, Montreal.

16 vii William, born the 2nd July 1829 and baptized the same day at Notre Dame, Bytown; married the 28th January 1873, to Victoria Harbick, at Notre Dame, Montreal; died the 22nd and buried the 23rd September 1888 in Ottawa.

No. 4 Elizabeth Kipp Bruguière 1791 - 1870

Elizabeth Kipp VI, oldest daughter of Samuel Kipp V and Mary Knapp V, was born at Quebec the 27th July 1791, according to the baptismal certificate, after her conversion to catholic way, at the age of 16 years, the 13th February 1808, two days before her marriage.

This certificate, which is signed in her hand, appears in the register of the church of Notre Dame, Montreal and reads as follows:

“The thirteen February one thousand eight and eight I baptized Elizabeth born at Quebec the twenty-seven July one thousand seven hundred and ninety one of the legitimate marriage of Squire Samuel Kipp and of Lady Marina Napp, the godfather was Squire Louis Gaultier and the godmother Lady Marguerite Gauthier wife of Chevalier who signed as well as the baptized.

(Signed) Elizabeth Kipp

(Signed) Louis Gauthier
(Signed) Marguerite Gauthier
(Signed) LS. Sulnier, priest”

Two days after this ceremony, that is the 15th February 1808, Elizabeth Kipp married, in the same church, Jean Baptiste Médard Bruguière, of Assomption, son of Jean Baptiste Bruguière, major in the Canadian militia, originally from Pont-Saint-Esprit, dioceses of Saint-Paul-Trois-Châteaux, France in 1750, and of his wife Marie Madeleine Massue.

Médard Bruguière was born the 23rd March 1788, at Assomption, formerly known by the name of Saint Pierre du Portage, and he was baptized the next day, in the local parish church. His godfather was the parish priest, the abbot Médard Pétrimoulx, in honour of which he received the name Médard, and his godmother was Elizabeth Soupiran, widow of Pierre Pétrimoulx who was the brother of the abbot Pétrimoulx.

The marriage certificate of Médard Bruguière to Elizabeth Kipp reads as follows:

“The 15th February one thousand eight hundred and eight after the publication of a ban of marriage as much in this parish as in that of Saint Pierre du Portage without impediment nor opposition and after having obtained the exemption of two other bans of Messire Jean Henry Auguste Roux, Vicar general of this dioceses, I the undersigned priest did my functions as a priest in taking the mutual consent by oath of Squire Jean Baptiste Médard Bruguière youngest son of Jean Baptiste Bruguière major of the militia consenting and of the late lady Marie Magdeleine Massu of Saint Pierre du Portage of one part, and of the young lady Elizabeth Kipp youngest daughter of the late Squire Captain Samuel Kipp and of the lady Marie Knapp guardian and consenting of this parish on the other part married them following the laws and of the Squires Amable Archambault brother-in-law of the wife of Jean Baptiste Bruguière his brother Jean Baptiste Fournier and several others who have signed with us and those married.

(Signed) Elizabeth Kipp
(Signed) Médard Bruguière
(Signed) J.B. Fournier
(Signed) J. Bte. Bruguière
(Signed) Michel Fournier
(Signed) Amable Archambault
(Signed) D. Gianonaly
(Signed) Sophie Routier
(Signed) Nancy Patterson
(Signed) Marguerite Gauthier
(Signed) Richard Smith
(Signed) James Smith
(Signed) Susanna Smith
(Signed) Chatrine (sic) Bruguière
(Signed) Moses Knapp
(Signed) Nancy Dieffenbech
(Signed) Marie Louise Fournier

(Signed) Thomas Fournier
(Signed) Ls. Saulnier, priest.”

The blessed Thursday, March 19, 1818, Elizabeth Kipp became godmother of a child of her brother-in-law Charles Bruguière and his wife Sophie Mercier. The child, a girl, received, at the request of her godmother, the name of Elizabeth. It is non other than Mother Elisabeth Bruyère, founder of the Grey Sister of the Cross, of Ottawa⁽³⁾.

Madame Médard Bruguière, born Elizabeth Kipp, died at Joliette, the 1st of March 1870, and was buried the 3rd of the same month in the catholic cemetery in Joliette, as attested in the following record in the parish register of St. Charles Borromée, in Joliette.

“This third of March, one thousand eight hundred and seventy, by our priest undersigned, was buried in the local cemetery the body of Dame Elisabeth Kipp, who lived here, widow of the late Médard Bruyères, while he was living a farmer at St. Paul, died the day before yesterday, aged about seventy nine years. Present M. Laurent Désaulniers and M. Antoine Derome, both son-in-laws of the deceased, who signed with us.

(Signed) L. Désaulniers
(Signed) A. Derome
(Signed) L. Levesque, priest.”

Her husband, Médard Bruguière⁽⁴⁾, had predeceased her by twenty-eight years, having died in 1842, in St. Paul de Lavaltrie, the 2nd March, at the age of about 54 years, and buried the 4th according to the following record:

“This fourth of March one thousand eight hundred and forty two, the undersigned and parish priest have buried in the church of this parish the body of Médard Bruguière, Squire, Captain of the militia, deceased the day before yesterday, aged fifty four years, spouse of Elisabeth Kipp of this parish. Present were the undersigned.

(Signed) Pierre Guibord
(Signed) Urgel Bruguière
(Signed) Frs. Archambault
(Signed) Louis Partenais
(Signed) Lactea DeRome
(Signed) Frank X DeRome
(Signed) F.M. Turcotte, priest.”

Medard Bruguière and Elizabeth Kipp had the following children:

17 i. Urgel, born the 8th and baptized the 9th April 1811 in Assomption; buried the 21st September 1854, at L’Industrie (Joliette).

18 ii. Theophile, born the 31st August 1813, in Assomption; married four times in the American West. Buried the 18th February 1896 in the catholic cemetery of Salix, Iowa, United States.

19 iii. Marie Elizabeth Rachel, born the 8th April 1816 and baptized the next day in Assomption; married the 28th May 1838, to Louis Antoine Derome, in St. Paul de Lavaltrie; died the 4th December 1894, in Joliette.

20 iv. Rose-Anne (or Rosianne) , born the 20th September 1823 and baptized the next day in Assomption; married the 16th May 1842 to Laurent Désaulniers-Lesieur, notary; died about 1865 in Joliette.

21 v. Jacques, born about???

22 vi. Marie Esther, born the 29th March 1830 and baptised the next day, in Assomption; died the 28th December 1837 in Assomption.

No.5 Charlotte Kipp Désautels 1796 - 1889

Charlotte Kipp VI, last child of Samuel Kipp V and Mary Knapp, was born the 6th July 1796 according to the record of baptism, the 30th August 1796, in the Anglican church Christ Church, in Montreal. She received the first name of Charlotte in honour of Charlotte Hughes who was her godmother.

The 17th June 1813, before master Thomas Barron, Montreal notary, she signed a marriage contract with Joseph Désautels, himself a notary, born the 26th November 1788 and baptized the same day, in Notre Dame, Montreal, son of François Désautels and Charlotte Thessier.

Of Charlotte Kipp's family, the following parents assisted in the signature of the contract: Moses Knapp, her grandfather, Elizabeth Hatfield, her grandmother, Moses Knapp, her uncle, and Oliver Smith, another uncle, and Elizabeth Smith, her aunt. On the part of Joseph Désautels we find his brother Theodore, and a sister-in-law Josephe Roy.

The marriage took place three days later, Saturday, 20th June 1813, in the Scottish Presbyterian church on Saint Gabriel Street, in Montreal, before the Reverend J. Somerville, pastor of this church.

Joseph Désautels was received as a notary the 15th May 1810 and had a considerable clientele as indicated by the list of his records, on deposit at the judiciary archives of the district of Montreal. He died prematurely, at the age of 32 years, the 28th February 1821, according to the burial register of the parish of Notre Dame, in Montreal.

Mrs. Désautels lived to the advanced age of 93 years. She converted to Catholicism and died in Joliette, at the residence of Louis Antoine Derome, opposite the church, the 25th July 1889, and was buried the 27 of the same month in the local cemetery of this place as attested by the following record in register of the parish of St. Charles Borromée.

“The twenty-seven July one thousand one hundred and eighty nine, the undersigned priests buried, in the parish cemetery, the body of Charlotte Kipp wife of the late Joseph Désautels, in his life notary of this parish deceased the twenty fifth presently aged 93 years. Present were Amédée Derome, Louis Antoine Adolphe Magnan, Berthélémi Vézina, Urgel Dorval, Charles Leprohon and several others who sigend with us. Reading done.

(Signed) A. Magnan
(Signed) J. B. Chapdelaine
(Signed) Barth. Vézina
(Signed) N. Perodeau
(Signed) Geo. L. Désaulniers
(Signed) L. J. A. Derome
(Signed) D. A. Dostaler
Signed) Dr. M.S. Boulet
Signed) U. Dorval
Signed) V. L. Désaulniers
Signed) Chs. B. H. Leprohon
Signed) P. Beaudry, Priest
Signed) A. Derome, priest

Mrs. Désautels made a will at Montreal, the 25th July 1858, before the notary P. Mathieu, in which she mentioned her grand daughter, Incie Désautels, underage child, who apparently lived with her.

Joseph Désautels and Charlotte Kipp had three children baptised at Notre Dame church, in Montreal:

23 i. Charlotte Rachel, born the 9th June 1814; married the 3rd September 1832 to Joseph Hilarion Jobin; died the 21st July 1883.

24 ii Elizabeth, born the 4th January 1816; died the 21st April 1817 in Montreal.

25 iii Joseph, born the 9th January 1818; married to a maiden Gareau; died the 15th November 1850, at Fort Pierre, on the upper Missouri.

No. 6 Mary Ann Kipp de Lorimier

Mary Ann Kipp, daughter of James Kipp VI and of his first wife Elizabeth Rocheleau was probably born at Assomption, in Lower Canada, and appears to have been raised in this location by her uncle and her aunt, Médard Bruguière and Elizabeth Kipp, after her parents left Canada for the West.

The 3rd October 1843, at Assomption, she married Louis Gustave de Lorimier, clerk of the Circuit court of Assomption, son of François Thomas de Lorimier and of Marie Josephe Boulet.

Mr. De Lorimier became later protonotaire of the Superior Court at Saint Hyacinthe where he settled about 1857.

Mary Ann Kipp de Lorimier died at St. Hyacinthe the 29th August 1865. Her funeral service took place at St. Hyacinthe the 1st of September 1865 and the body was placed aboard the train to Montreal and was buried the same day in the cemetery of Côte de Neiges at Montreal. The record of her burial said that she was aged 47 years.

Louis Gustave de Lorimier entered into a second marriage with Méлина Desforges and a third marriage with Vitaline Lussier, widow of a doctor Côté, and died at St. Hyacinthe the 22nd March 1880.

We do not know of any children of his first marriage to Mary Ann Kipp.

No. 8 Joseph Kipp VII - 1913

Joseph Kipp VII, son of James Kipp VI and of his “savage” wife Earth Woman, was born at Fort Union, a post of the American Fur Company, in the upper Missouri, today in the State of Montana.

He was a fur trader, like his father, and was a well know figure in the American west. A biography of him, written by Martha Edgerton Plassmann, was published, with a portrait, in the newspaper “The Froid Tribune,” of Great Falls, Montana, on September 12th 1924.

He was married to an indian, daughter of Chief Heavy Runner, and died at Browning, Montana, the 10th December 1913.

He had three children, as follows:

- 26 i. Mary, born about 1889; 1st married to Belledeaux; 2nd married to Connolly.
- 27 ii. James, born about 1891; married.
- 28 iii. George Grinnell, born about 1897; married.

No. 9 Samuel Kipp VII

Samuel Kipp VII, son of James Kipp VI and of one of his “savage” wives, is known to us through the will of James Kipp VI, made in 1868, in which he makes mention of his grand daughter Julia Kipp, daughter of his son Samuel Kipp, deceased.

Samuel Kipp VII was also married and had:

- 29 i. Julia, born about.

No. 14 Augustin Wulfhild (Wilfrid) Kipp VII 1823 –

Augustin Wulfhild Kipp VII, known by the name of Wilfrid, was born in Montreal, the 10th November 1823, son of Samuel Kipp VI and Marie Anne Gaudry, and was baptized the same day at Notre Dame church in Montreal.

He was thus just 7 years old when his father died at Bytown in November 1830.

The 17th January 1854, at the church Notre Dame of Bytown he married Helena Kelley, daughter of John Kelly and Margarita Boyle.

We know of the following children:

30 i. Margaret Matilda, born the 1st October 1854 and baptized the next day at the church Notre Dame of Bytown; died the 26th January 1855.

31 ii. Marie H el ene, born and baptized the 12th October 1855 at Notre Dame of Bytown.

32 iii. Mary Ann, born the 4th and baptized the 8th March 1857 at Notre Dame of Bytown; married to Arthur Rochon.

33 iv. Elizabeth, born the 20th and baptized the 21st December 1859 at Notre Dame, Ottawa.

34 v. H el ene, born the 11th and baptized the 12th June 1860 at Notre Dame, Ottawa.

35 vi. Marie Elisa Georgiana , born the 15th and baptized the 16th January 1862 at Notre Dame, Ottawa.

36 vii. Wilfrid John, born the 26th and baptized the 27th September 1863 at Notre Dame, Ottawa.

37 viii. Agnes Maude Mathilde, born the 2nd and baptized the 5th November 1865 at Notre Dame of Ottawa.

38 ix. Ellen Theresa, born and baptized the 17th November 1867 at Notre Dame of Ottawa.

No. 16 William Kipp VII 1829 - 1888

William Kipp VII, last child of Samuel Kipp VI and Marie Anne Gaudry, was born the 2nd July 1829 at Bytown and was baptized the same day at the church of Notre Dame of Bytown, today the Cathedral of Ottawa.

The 28th January 1873, he married Victoria Harbick dit B erichon, daughter of Louis Harbick and Anna Proulx. The marriage took place in the church of Notre Dame in

Montreal, and the record said that William Kipp was a beer merchant and lived in Montreal.

He appears, however to have lived in Ottawa most of his life.

From his marriage with Victoria Harbick were born the following children, all baptized at the church of Notre Dame of Ottawa.

39 i. Marie Anna Eva, baptized the 9th August 1874; died the 31st March 1891.

40 ii. Joseph William, born the 11th and baptized the 16th April 1876; 1st married to Marie Martel; 2nd married the 24th November 1902 to Anna Levesque (daughter of Joseph Arthur Levesque and Marie Anne Breen) in the Cathedral in Ottawa.

41 iii. Adolphe Wilfrid, born the 4th and baptized the 12th May 1878; married the 12th October 1903 to Délia St. Amour (daughter of Francois St. Amour and Lily Bessette).

42 iv. Louis Arthur Silva, born the 1st and baptized the 6th July 1880; 1st married to Valéda May; 2nd married to Yvonne Labelle.

43 v. Marie Rose Linda Laurentine, born the 5th and baptized the 8th October 1882; married the 15th October 1902 to Albert Paquette (son of Jean Paquette and Marguerite Serrazin), in the Cathedral of Ottawa; died the 18th and buried the 20th February 1908, in Ottawa.

44 vi. Joseph Oscar Arthur, born the 15th and baptized the 17th August 1885, at the Cathedral of Ottawa; married the 10th August 1908, to Blanche Antoinette Villeneuve (daughter of Théophile Villeneuve and Scholastique Sabourin) at the Cathedral of Ottawa; died the 2nd and buried the 4th October 1910, in Ottawa.

45 vii. Marie Célia Béatrice, born the 8th and baptized the 9th November 1887, in the Cathedral of Ottawa.

No. 18 Théophile Bruguière 1813 - 1896

Théophile Bruguière, son of Médard Bruguière and Elizabeth Kipp, was born the 31st August 1813, in Assomption.

Like his uncle James Kipp he had quite an eventful career in the American West in the fur trade and other enterprises.

His biography is the subject of Chapter IX of the present study.

He died at Salix, Iowa, in February 1896 and had thirteen children.

His first wife, Blazing Could, gave him seven as follows:

46 i. Jean Baptiste, born about 1838; died the 1st February 1855⁽⁵⁾.

- 47 ii. André (Andrew) , born about ; died young.
- 48 iii. Rose, born about ; 1st married to Odilon Lamoureux; 2nd married to Victor Dubois.
- 49 iv. Marie (Mary) , born about ; married to a Mr. Traversier, son of an Augustin Traversier.
- 50 v. Selena, born about ; 1st married to a Mr. Foerster; 2nd married a Mr. Hardy.
- 51 vi. Charles, born about ; married to ; officer in the American Army.
- 52. vii. Eugene (Eugent) , born about ; married to .

With his second wife, Dawn, he had six children, as follows:

- 53 i. Julia, born the 15th November 1844 at Fort Vermillion; 1st married in 1865 to George Northrup in Sioux City; 2nd married to Cassius Conger.
- 54 ii. Victoria, born about ; died young.
- 55 iii. Joseph, born about .
- 56 iv. John (Jean) , born about .
- 57 v. William, born about .
- 58 vi. Samuel, born about .

No. 19 Rachel Bruguière Derome 1816 - 1894

Marie Elizabeth Rachel Bruguière, daughter of Médard Bruguière and Elizabeth Kipp, was born in Assomption, the 8th April 1816 and was baptized the next day in Assomption's parish church. Her godfather was Charles of Saint Ours, seigneur of Saint Ours and one of the eminent men of his time in the country. Her godmother was Reine Charlotte Godefroy from Tonnancourt, a cousin of the gentleman from Saint Ours.

The record of baptism in the parish register of Assomption reads as follows:

“The nine April of the year one thousand eight hundred and sixteen, by the undersigned, parish priest, was baptized Marie Elizabeth Rachel, born yesterday, daughter of Mr. Jean Baptiste Médard Burguier, farmer, of this parish, and Mrs. Elizabeth Kipp, his lawful wife. Godfather Charles de St. Ours, esquire, godmother young lady Reine de Tonnancour, who have with the father signed with us.

(Signed) Reine de Tonnancour

(Signed) Médard Burguier

(Signed) Chs de St. Ours

(Signed) J. J. Roy, priest.”

At the age of 22 years, the 28th May 1838, at St. Paul de Lavaltrie, she married Louis Antoine Derome, son of François Xavier Derome and Angélique Partenay (Parthenais) .

Their record of marriage, in the register of the parish of St. Paul de Lavaltrie, reads as follows:

“The year one thousand eight hundred and thirty eight, the twenty eight of May, after the publication of a single marriage ban extolled at the parish mass, dispensing with the other two by permission of Lessire Roque, vicar-general, between Mr. Louis Antoine Derome, law student, living in the parish of Assomption, oldest son of Mr. François Xavier Derome, and the deceased Lady Angélique Partenain, his father and mother of the parish of Assomption, of one part, and young lady Rachelle Bruguier, oldest daughter of Médard Bruguier, esquire and Lady Elizabeth Kipp, her father and mother, of the parish of Assomption, of the other part, the same publication being made at Assomption, as it appears by the certificate of M. Labelle, parish priest, without any hindrance, or opposition on the part of the parents, coming to our knowledge, we the undersigned priests, having received the mutual consent of the parties and they having given the nuptial benediction following the usage of the church, in the presence of Louis Partenais, and of Etienne Partenais, undersigned, uncles of the groom, and Urgel Bruguère, brother of the bride, of Eugène Faribault, her cousin, all undersigned, as well as the couple and several other witnesses.

(Signed) Rachel Bruguère
(Signed) L. A. DeRome
(Signed) Médard Bruguier
(Signed) Franc. X. Deromer
(Signed) Octave Partenias
(Signed) Frs. Archambault
(Signed) P. U. Archambault
(Signed) Amable Archambault
(Signed) Zéphirin Archambault
(Signed) Priscille Archambault
(Signed) M. L. Henriette Partenay
(Signed) Marie Tharisie Elizabeth Archambault
(Signed) Victoire Eleonore Pamela Ozine Archambault
(Signed) Urgel Bruguère
(Signed) Mary Kipp
(Signed) Angélique Perrault
(Signed) M. Amiot
(Signed) J. E. Faribault
(Signed) Louis Partenais
(Signed) Andre T. Lagarde, priest.”

As indicated in the record mentioned above, Louis Antoine Derome was a law student at the time of his marriage. The second Christian name of Antoine that he used was not

given at baptism. He was also aged about 22 years and was born at Montreal the 18th August 1816.

His record of baptism in the register of the church Notre Dame in Montreal reads as follows:

“The nineteenth August one thousand eight hundred and sixteen I the priest undersigned baptized Louis born yesterday of the lawful marriage of François Xavier Derome clockmaker and Angélique Parthenai. The godfather was Louis Parthenay and the godmother Marie Josette Simard who with the father present signed with us.

(Signed) Louis Parthenay
(Signed) Marie Joseph Simard
(Signed) François Xavier Derome
(Signed) Ciquard, priest.”

Louis Antoine Derome settled at St. Paul de Lavaltrie and in 1849 was elected the mayor of the county of Berthier.

He was a candidate in the election of a deputy to the Legislative Assembly for the county of Berthier in 1848 but was defeated by D. N. Armstrong. The following facts are known about this election:

“The votes took place the 13th and 14th of January; the evening of the first day, M. Derome carried the day by a majority of 356 votes, but the second he didn't do the same and the supporters of M. Armstrong employed, for the triumph of their candidate, the most reprehensible means.

They sent the children to vote; there were some who voted five or six times in succession. An inhabitant of our village (Joliette), still living (1893), returned to vote eleven consecutive times; he voluntarily recalled this memory.

To have more voters they went to find them to the other side of the river.

To be sure, the truth sometimes does not seem likely, they also gathered the votes of animals, sleighs, anything went; it was a real comedy.

M. D. M. Armstrong was elected; the count made parish by parish, showed that eleven hundred and fifty-five votes obtained by this fraudulent means should have been canceled. Nevertheless, the election of the county of Berthier was maintained. Today these things would not happen this way.” (Joliette Illustre, 1893).

Louis Antoine Derome left Saint-Paul to go and live at Joliette, then called L'Industrie, about the middle of the century.

He was a merchant as well as a photographer and held the office of telegrapher in Joliette.

He occupied several important offices and was village councillor, superintendent of schools, magistrate superintendent for small suits. He retired from active life about 1880.

He made his residence in the market where he also had his business but about 1888 constructed a magnificent residence opposite the church St. Charles Borromée, today the

cathedral of Joliette. This house is now occupied by Mr. Emile Prévost and his family (q.v.).

Louis Antoine Derome was also a Lieutenant-colonel of the 2nd battalion of the regiment of Berthier. He lived to the advanced age of 90 years and died in Joliette the 10th April 1907.

Rachel Bruguiere Derome, his wife, died at 78 years, the 4th December 1894 and was buried in Joliette.

Their children, all baptized at Saint Paul de Lavaltrie, were:

59 i. Louis Etienne Gustave, born the 24th March 1839; married the 25th November 1872 to Marie Evéline Gadbois, in Salix, Iowa, United States; died the 6th October 1910, in Montreal.

60 ii. Louis Joseph Amédée, born the 24th May 1841; died unmarried the 9th July 1922, in Montreal.

61 iii. Alcide, born the 26th April 1843; drowned at St. Paul de Lavaltrie the 22nd August 1856.

62 iv. Joséphine, born the 12th April 1845; married the 1st May 1865 to Charles Bernard Henri Leprohon, in Joliette; died the 22nd May 1925.

63 v. Marie Hermine, born the 22nd April 1847; married the 1st February 1869 to Jean Urgel Richard, in Joliette; died the 12th April 1932 in St. Eusèbe hospital, in Joliette.

64 vi. François Xavier Arthur, born the 26th October 1849; ordained priest the 18th August 1872; curate of Ste. Martine of Chateaugauy, 1872-1879; parish priest of Lachute, 1879-1894; retired to the Institution of Sourdes-Muettes, in Montreal where he died the 5th April 1928.

65 vii. Hectorine, born the 17th October 1851; died unmarried the 15th April 1939, in Joliette.

66 viii. Urgel, born the 26th June 1854; died the 14th October 1856.

No. 20 Rose-Anne Bruguière Desaulniers-Lesieur 1823 - 1865

Rose-Anne (or Rosianne) Bruguière, daughter of Médard Bruguière and Elizabeth Kipp, was born in Assomption the 20th September 1823. She was baptized in the same place the next day. Her godfather was Amable Archambault and her godmother was Charlotte Kipp, her aunt, wife of Joseph Désautels.

The 16th May 1842, at Saint-Paul de Lavaltrie, she married Laurent Désaulniers-Lesieur, born in 1828 and received as notary the 27th October 1836, son of Laurent Désaulniers-Lesieur and Louise Héroux, of Rivier-du-Loup-en-haut, today Louiseville, Que.

The notary Laurent Désaulniers practiced in Joliette from 1836 to 1884 and his files are on deposit at the court house in Joliette. He died the 14th February 1887.

Mrs. Désaulniers, born Rose-Anne and married under the first name of Rosianne Bruguière, died about 1865.

According to F. L. Désaulniers, historian of Yamachiche, Laurent Désaulniers and Rosianne Bruguière had the following children:

- 67 i. Tancrède (son), married to a German, in the United States.
- 68 ii. Marie Louise, born the 20th February 1847, in Joliette; hospital nun at the Hotel-Dieu in Montreal; entered the profession the 17th January 1872; died the 7th November 1928, at Hotel-Dieu and buried in the vault of this institution.
- 69 iii. Marie Angéline, born the 16th January 1849; married the 22nd May 1888 to Alexis Hilaire Alendre Cabana, notary, in Joliette. Deceased.
- 70 iv. Almidas, born ??; married two times. His second wife was a young lady of the Beland family. Notary.
- 71 v. Georges, born about 1855; married to Marie Louise Chartier; died the 8th and buried the 10th May 1946, in Joliette.
- 72 vi. Victor, born the 9th September 1857.

No. 23 Charlotte Rachel Désautels Jobin 1814 - 1883

Charlotte Rachel Désautels, daughter of Joseph Désautels and Charlotte Kipp, was born in Montreal, the 9th June 1814 and was baptized the same day at the church of Notre Dame.

The 3rd September 1832, at the church of Notre Dame, she married Joseph Hilarion Jobin, notary, born the 25th October 1811, son of Joseph Jobin and Marie Rachel Travé dit St. Romain.

Mr. Jobin was admitted to the profession of notary the 7th February 1833 and practiced in Montreal.

In 1851 he was elected member of the Legislative assembly for the county of Berthier. In 1852 he was elected deputy of the new county of Joliette and was reelected as such in 1857 and in 1861. He was a liberal.

He died of a heart attack, at his residence, 110 Saint Hubert Street, in Montreal, the 31st August 1881, and was buried in the cemetery of Côte des Neiges.

His wife, born Charlotte Rachel Désautels, survived him and died the 21st July 1883. She was buried the 24th of the same month in the cemetery of Côte des Neiges.

From the marriage of Joseph Hilarion Jobin and Charlotte Rachel Désautels issued at least four children:

73 i. Rachelle Mathilde, baptized the 28th May 1833, at Notre Dame, Montreal; buried the 27th August 1834, in Montreal.

74 ii. Julie Hermine, baptized the 24th November 1834, at Notre Dame, Montreal; married to Philéas Etienne Roy; died the 10th July 1859 and buried the 13th in Montreal.

75 iii. Alfred Hilarion, baptized the 5th September 1836, at Notre Dame; buried the 21st September 1836, in Montreal.

76 iv. Joseph Damase, baptized the 8th September 1837, at Notre Dame; buried the 24th May 1842 in Montreal.

No. 25 Joseph Désautels 1818 - 1850

Joseph Désautels, son of Joseph Désautels and Charlotte Kipp, was born the 9th January 1818 in Montreal and was baptized the next day at the church of Notre Dame, in Montreal.

Like his uncle, James Kipp, and his cousin, Théophile Bruguière, he opted for a life of adventure in the American west and was in the employ of the American Fur Company.

In 1842, he was a clerk at Fort McKenzie, on the Upper Missouri, under the orders of Chardon, whereas in 1847 Larpenteur⁽⁶⁾ recorded that Joseph Désautels was in charge of Fort Clark when he made a visit to this post.

He married a young lady of the Gareau family. We do not know the names of the parents of this young lady but in the accounts of this voyage to the fur country one sees often the name of Pierre Gareau, interpreter, in the employ of the company.(7).

Joseph Désautels died the 15th November 1850, at Fort Pierre (today the city of Pierre, State of South Dakota). The journal "Les Mélanges Religieux" of Montreal, announced his decease the 8th July 1851, in these terms:

"At Fort Pierre on the Upper Missouri. Mr. Jos. Désautels, at the age of 33 years. This man died the 15th November last, after his return to Montreal, where he came last summer to see his family, after an absence of fifteen years. Mr. Jos. Ripp (James Kipp), his uncle, who accompanied him and M. A. Picott, advantageously known, who received him at his

fort, lavished him with all possible care but in vain. He was the guardian of Fort Clark on the Missouri, one of the wilderness posts of the American Fur Company, and one of the best hunters of the wild buffalo. The Rev. Père De Smet, missionary, speaks positively of Mr. Désautels, in the account of his trips⁽⁸⁾ among the savage tribes of the rocky mountains.”

Joseph Désautels and his wife born Gareau had at least one daughter:

77 i. Lucille (or Lucie) , born about 1841; died unmarried, at the age of 64 years, in Joliette, Province of Quebec, the 4th December 1905 and buried the 6th of the same month.

No. 26 Mary Kipp Belledeaux-Connolly 1889 -

Mary Kipp, daughter of Joseph Kipp VII and his Indian wife, was born about 1889. She married in a first wedding a Belledeaux and in a second wedding a Connolly.

In June 1948 she was living with her family at Cut Bank, Montana, United States. From her first marriage she had:

78 i. Merlin Joseph (Belledeaux), born about ??

From the second marriage (Connolly) she had two daughters and a son.

No. 27 James Kipp VIII 1891 –

James Kipp VIII, son of Joseph Kipp VII, was born about 1891. He was married but the name of his wife is unknown. He was father to two infants, a boy and a girl, of whom:

79 i. Joseph Aubut, born about ??

80 ii. A girl, born about 1933.

They lived at Dodson, Montana, United States.

No. 28 George Grinnell Kip VIII 1897 –

George Grinnell Kipp VIII, other son of Joseph Kipp VII, was born about 1897. He was married but we do not know the name of his wife.

They lived at Browning, Montana, United States, and their postal address in 1948 was Box 153, Browning, Montana. They had three children:

81 i. James Grinnell, born about 1919; married.

82 ii. Mary Lorraine , born about 1922; married to Dexter Galbraith.

83 iii. , born about 1932.

No. 40 Joseph William Kipp VIII 1876 -

Joseph William Kipp VIII, son of William and Victoria Harbick was born in Ottawa, the 11th April 1876 and was baptized the 16 of the same month at the Cathedral of Ottawa.

He married in a first wedding Marie Martel and in a second, the 24th November 1902, at the Cathedral of Ottawa, Anna Levesque, daughter of Joseph Arthur Levesque and Marie Anne Breen.

No. 42 Louis Arthur Silva Kipp VIII 1880 -

Louis Arthur Silva Kipp VIII, son of William Kipp VII and Victoria Harbick, was born the 1st July 1880, in Ottawa and was baptized the 6th of the same month at the Cathedral. He married Valéda May and becoming a widower, he married in a second wedding Yvonne Labelle. They lived at No. 333 Saint-Joseph Boulevard, Hull, Que.

From the first marriage of Silva Kipp to Valéda May, were born:

84 i. May, born about ?? ; married to Lionel Pichette, doctor, originally from Campbellton, New Brunswick.

85 ii. Anita, born about ?? ; married to Marcel Laverdure, accountant.

From the marriage of Silva Kipp to his second wife, Yvonne Labelle, were born:

86 i. Incille, born about ?? ; married to Robert Miller.

87 ii. André, born about ?? ; married to Margaret Turner.

No. 44 Joseph Arthur Oscar Kipp VIII 1885 - 1910

Joseph Arthur Oscar Kipp VIII, son of William Kipp VII and Victoria Harbick, was born in Ottawa the 15th August 1885 and was baptized the 17th at the Cathedral.

At the same church, the 10th August 1908, he married Blanche Antoinette Villeneuve, daughter of Théodule Villeneuve and Scholastique Sabourin. He died the 2nd October 1910 and was buried the 4th in Ottawa.

Oscar Kipp and Blanche Villeneuve had:

88 i. Oscar, born in 1910; died the 25th July 1910 and buried in Ottawa, the next day, aged 4 months.

No. 59 Gustave Derome 1839 - 1910

Gustave Derome, son of Louis Antoine Derome and Rachel Bruguere, was born the 24th March 1839, in St. Paul de Lavaltrie. He was received as a notary the 15th February 1862 and practiced several years at Industrie, former name of the village of Joliette, Quebec.

Following the example of several of his ancestors, he left for the American West to find his fortune.

He practiced as a notary in Salix, Iowa, where he was married the 25th November 1872, to a French Canadian of his country, Marie Evéline Gadbois, born in St. Césaire, Lower Canada, the 31st May 1854.

Mrs. Derome died at Salix, Iowa, the 11th January 1892, following the birth of her 14th child. After her death, Louis Etienne Gustave Derome, (to give him all of his names), returned to Canada with his family and lived first in Joliette, with his sister Josephine, married to Charles Bernard Henri Leprohon, who herself had a large family, then in Montreal.

Gustave Derome died in Montreal the 6th October 1910.

Louis Etienne Gustave Derome and Marie Evéline Gabois had, as far as we can tell, fourteen children, as follows:

- 89 i. Emile, born the 18th December 1873; died the 4th January 1881, in Salix, Iowa.
- 90 ii. Alcide, born the 23rd March 1875; died the 30th January 1881, in Salix, Iowa.
- 91 iii. Georges, born the 4th February 1877; married the 3rd June 1907, in the church St. Jacques de Montreal, to Marie Aline Larocque; died the 7th August 1940 in Montreal.
- 92 iv. Antoinette, born the 5th May 1879. Unmarried. Lives in Montreal.
- 93 v. Amédée, born the 4th October 1880; married to Leota Wilson. Lives in Minneapolis, Minnesota. No children. Postal address: P.O. Box No. 1, Main Post Office, Minneapolis, Minn.
- 94 vi. Joséphine, born the 4th October 1880 (twin of Amédée); Nun of the Precious Blood, St. Hyacinthe, Quebec.
- 95 vii. Théophile, born the 14th May 1882; married the 26th November 1914, to Adrienne Bissonnette; died in Montreal, the 22nd November 1944 and buried the 24th.
- 96 viii. Rachel, born the 19th July 1883; 1st married the 2nd April 1907, in the church St. Jacques de Montreal, to Paul Bonard; 2nd married the 9th February 1927, in the church St. Nicolas de Ahuntsic, Montreal, to Joseph Filiatrault.
- 97 ix. Arthur, born the 9th October 1884; died unmarried, in Montreal, the 20th February 1929.

98 x. Evéline, born the 24th November 1885; married the 19th September 1911, in the church St. Louis de France, Montreal, to Joseph Henri Lambert.

99 xi. Thomas, born the 6th March 1888; married the 4th June 1921, in the Cathedral of Montreal, to Annette Normandin, widow of George Prew and daughter of A.A. Normandin and Corinne Loranger; died in Toronto, where he lived, the 11th March 1944 and buried in Montreal, the 14th.

100 xii. Anna, born the 21st June 1889; married the 24th May 1935 to Jules de Lorimier. Lives in Montreal. No children.

101 xiii. Gustave, born the 28th October 1890; died the 4th January 1891, in Salix Iowa.

102 xiv. Hector, born the 10th January 1892; died in Montreal, the 18th December 1908.

They were all born and baptized in Salix, Iowa, in the United States.

No. 60 Louis Joseph Amédée Derome 1841 - 1922

Louis Joseph Amédée Derome, second son of Louis Antoine Derome and Marie Rachel Bruguière, was born in St. Paul de Lavaltrie, the 24th May 1841.

He was only 15 when his parents, after a stay of a year in Montreal, settled at Joliette. Five years later, he went to St. Hyacinthe to study the art of photography and he lived some time in the city with Mr. De Lorimier.

At the age of 28 years, Joseph Hilarion Jobin (q.v.), his cousin, procured him a position in Montreal, in the service of the bookseller Jean Baptiste Rolland.

In 1878, he formed in partnership with Hubert C. Cadieux, a business of the same kind. The House of Cadieux and Derome became very prosperous and made a considerable business of importing. It was well known to all of the members of the catholic clergy and the communities of the country as well as in Europe.

Amédée Derome constructed a magnificent residence at the end of the Montée de Zouave, in Montreal, and received there a number of prominent people as well as many members of his family and several of the latter made a stay of residence of several years.

For business purposes of the house of Cadieux and Derome he made frequent trips to Europe – more than thirty times.

He founded the directory of catholic clergy “Ecclesiastical Canada,” today published by Beauchemin and in its sixty fourth year of publication

About 1902, the House of Cadieux Derome sustained several bad financial turn-overs and closed its doors.

Mr. Derome entered at that time into the House of Beauchemin but about 1909 founded a new bookselling business under the name L.J.A. Derome Limited which only had several years of existence.

A very charitable and devout man, Mr. Derome founded, in 1881, the Adoration Nocturne, in Montreal, and he directed the activities until his death.

Remaining single, he lived the last twenty years of his life retired at the Hotel-Dieu of Montreal where he died the 9th July 1922. He was buried in the cemetery of the Côte de Neiges, in Montreal, in “a pine coffin, blackened without adornment,” as he desired.

The abbot Elie J. Auclair, of the Royal Society of Canada, related the life and works of Louis Joseph Amédée Derome, in a brief account of 30 pages, published after his death in 1922, in which he described Mr. Amédée Derome with the title “saintly man of Montreal.”

No. 62 Joséphine Derome Leprohon 1845 - 1925

Joséphine Derome, daughter of Louis Antoine Derome and Marie Rachel Bruguier, was born in St. Paul de Lavaltrie, the 12th April 1845.

The 1st May 1865, in Joliette, she married Charles Bernard Henri Leprohon, born in the same place, the 30th August 1842, son of doctor Bernard Henri Leprohon, one of the pioneers of Joliette, and Caroline Loedel.

Through his grandmother, Mrs. Pierre Charles Loedel, born Marie Antoinette Tariou Taillant de Lanaudière, he inherited one part of the seigneurie of Lavaltrie, the estate of the family de Lanaudière, and he counted among his ancestors the main families of the French Regime of New France, comprising the Denys of la Ronde, Lacorne of Chapt, Lemoyne of Longueuil and Margane of Lavaltrie, and his great-great-great grandmother was Madeleine de Verchères, Canadian heroine.

Through his grandfather, Pierre Charles Loedel, he was descended from one of the surgeons of the Hessian troops of General Riedesel coming from Germany to America to fight the revolt of the English colonies in 1776.

Charles Bernard Henri Leprohon was made sheriff of Joliette and cumulated also the functions of coroner of the area and was made municipal councilor as well as school commissioner.

He was also part of the Canadian Militia and retired from the 83rd regiment of Joliette with the rank of Captain. He lived with his family in one of the grand residences of Joliette on Saint-Louis Street.

Charles Bernard Henri Leprohon died in Joliette, the 9th November 1897, and his wife Joséphine Derome survived him by more than 27 years, dying in Joliette, the 22nd May 1925.

They had twelve children, as follows:

- 103 i. Marie Joséphine Elisabeth Antoinette, born and baptized⁽⁹⁾ in Joliette the 24th February 1866; married the 22nd May 1894, in Joliette to Joseph Trefflé Caya; died the 24th December 1915.
- 104 ii. Charles Joseph Antoine Lanaudière, born and baptized in Joliette, the 10th March 1868; died the 11th January 1885, in Joliette.
- 105 iii. Marie Hortense Hectorine, born the 14th and baptized the 16th April 1870, in Joliette; died unmarried, the 19th July 1943, in Joliette.
- 106 iv. Marie Caroline Suzanne Verchères, born the 2nd and baptized the 3rd June 1872, in Joliette; died the 18th May 1873 and buried the 21st in Joliette.
- 107 v. Marie Hermine Rachel, born the 1st and baptized the 2nd August 1874, in Joliette; died unmarried, in Joliette, the 5th March 1925.
- 108 vi. Marie Anne Caroline Thérèse, born and baptized the 2nd April 1876, in Joliette; married the 27th April 1903, in Joliette, to Emile Prévost.
- 109 vii. Marie Charlotte Léonide Amanda, born and baptized the 9th April 1878, in Joliette; died the 26th June 1888, in Joliette.
- 110 viii. Bernard Hector Viateur Raymond, born and baptized the 9th February 1880; ordained priest the 29th June 1907; of the Institut des Clercs Saint-Vaiteur; died a noviciat of the Institute, in Joliette, the 7th August 1949.
- 111 ix. Marie Catherine Noélie Evéline, born and baptized the 25th December 1881, in Joliette; died the 16th December 1882, and buried the 18th, in Joliette.
- 112 x. Marie Bernadette Graziella Evangéline, born and baptized the 19th September 1883, in Joliette. Lives Saint-Louis Street, in Joliette.
113. xi. Marie Desanges Lucille Mélanie, born and baptized the 5th August 1885, in Joliette. Lives Saint-Louis Street, in Joliette.
- 114 xii. Charles Joseph Gustave Amédée, born and baptized the 7th July 1888, in Joliette; died the 18th March 1893 and buried the 20th, in Joliette.

No. 63 Marie Hermine Derome Richard 1847 - 1932

Marie Hermine Derome, daughter of Louis Antoine Derome and Marie Rachel Bruguière, was born in Saint-Paul de Lavaltrie, the 22nd April 1847. Her record of baptism, in the parish register reads as follows:

“The twenty-three April, one thousand eight hundred and forty-seven, the priests, undersigned, baptized Marie Hermine, born the preceding day, of the legitimate marriage of Louis Antoine Derome, esquire and lady Rachel Bruguière, of this parish. Godfather Louis Laurier, esquire; godmother lady Suzanne Antoinette Caroline Partenais who, along with the father, signed with us.

(Signed) L.A. Derome
(Signed) Ls. Laurier
(Signed) S.A.C. Partenais
(Signed) T.S. Brassard, priest.”

At Joliette, the 1st February 1869, she married Urgel Richard, lawyer, born and baptized the 17th October 1841 in St. Jacques de l’Achigan, son of Jean Richard and Marie Anne Richard. His baptism is written as follows:

“Today the seventeen October one thousand eight hundred and forty one or the priests undersigned baptized Jean Urgel Richard born this day of the legitimate marriage of Jean Richard, farmer, and Marie Anne Richard, of this parish. Godfather, David Richard, godmother Marguerite Richard who like the father could not sign.

(Signed) Jos. Vallée, priest.”

Jean Urgel Richard was of pure Acadian descent. His grandfather, Jean Baptiste Richard, was born in Port-Royal, in Acadia, in 1744, and went through the deportation, with his parents, in 1755. After a stay of a dozen years in New England, they arrived in L’Assomption, in 1767, with the numerous caravans of Acadians who came through the woods of Massachusetts and established themselves in Saint-Jacques de l’Achigan.

Jean Urgel Richard made his studies at the college of L’Assomption, where he was classmate of Sir Wilfrid Laurier, and was received as lawyer and member of the bar of the Province of Quebec, for the district of Montreal, on February 1866⁽¹⁰⁾. He practiced his profession at Joliette, where he lived still when, the 1st February 1869, he married Marie Hermine Derome, such as it appears in the following record in the parish register of St. Charles Borromée de Joliette:

“The first of February one thousand eight hundred and sixty-nine, after the publication of a ban of marriage, made to the praise of our parish mass, dispense of the other two bans having been obtained from M. A.F. Truteau vicar-general and administrator of the diocese, between J. Urgel Richard, esquire, lawyer of this place, oldest son of the late Jean Richard, in life a farmer, and Marie-Anne Richard, of the parish of St. Jacques de l’Achigan, of one part, and Marie Hermine Derome, oldest daughter of Louis Antoine Derome, esquire, and Marie Rachel Bruguière, also of this parish, of the other part, we, the priests undersigned, vicar of this parish, having received their mutual consent, and having given them the wedding blessing in the presence of Louis Antoine Derome, father

of the bride and of J.B.A. Richard, brother of the groom who, along with the groom and several parents and friends have signed with us.

(Signed) J.U. Richard
(Signed) M. Hermine Derome
(Signed) L.A. Derome
(Signed) J.B.A. Richard
(Signed) Chs. B. Leprohon
(Signed) M. Joséphine Derome
(Signed) M. L.L. Désaulniers
(Signed) Valérie Langlois
(Signed) Jos. Bonin, priest.”

Shortly after their marriage they settled in Drummondville, in the Eastern townships where Urgel Richard became the associate of George J. Hemming and practiced his profession for a long time. He was mayor of the city of Drummondville for a number of years. Conservative in politics, he was tangled in many electoral struggles in the counties of Drummond and Arthabaska.

He retired about 1902 and came back to live in Joliette with the Derome family.

Marie Hermine Derome Richard, his wife, was active in the community, as much at Drummondville as at Joliette, and contributed largely to the works of the parish charities. At Joilette, she organized numerous pilgrimages and annual bazaars to the profit of the St. Eusèbe hospital of Joliette managed by the nuns of Providence.

Jean Urgel Richard died in Joliette, Good Friday, 2nd April 1920, at three o'clock in the afternoon, and was buried in this place, the 5 April, as in the following record:

“The five April, one thousand nine hundred and twenty, We, priest, chaplin, at the college St. Joseph of Berthierville, buried in the cemetery of Joilette, the body of Jean-Urgel Richard, lawyer, died the second day of this month, at the age of seventy-eight years and six months, husband of Marie-Hermine Derome of this parish. Being present L.J.A. Richard, his son, J.B. Avila, his brother and several other parents and friends who have signed with us. Reading complete.

(Signed) L.J.A. Richard
(Signed) J.B.A. Richard
(Signed) E. Martin, priest
(Signed) Alphonse Richard
(Signed) Emile Prévost
(Signed) Louis Richard
(Signed) Avial Richard
(Signed) H. Leprohon, c.s.v.”

Marie Hermine Derome Richard survived him by a dozen years and died at the St. Eusèbe hospital, in Joliette, the 12th April 1932, aged almost 85 years, and was buried in

Joliette. The record of her interment in the register held at this institution reads as follows:

“The fourteen April one thousand nine hundred and thirty-two, we, priest undersigned, chaplain of the college of Saint-Joseph-de-Levis, Lauzon, buried in the cemetery of the place the body of Hermine Derome, widow of Urgel Richard, of Joliette, died the 12 of the current month in this house, at the age of eight four years and eleven months, after having received by the ministry of M. L’Aumônier the sacrements of Penitence, Eucharist, and Extreme Unction. Being present: Arthur Richard, her son, Louis, Pierre and Maurice Richard, her grandsons, and Emile Prévost, her nephew, signed with us. Reading complete.

(Signed) Arthur Richard
(Signed) Louis Richard
(Signed) Pierre Richard
(Signed) Maurice Richard
(Signed) Emile Prévost
(Signed) H. Leprohon, C.S.V.”

Urgel Richard and Hermine Derome had two children as follows:

115 i. Anna Rachel, born in Joliette, the 17th February 1872; in religion Sister Marie of the Rosary, of the Community of the Sister of the Présentation de Marie⁽¹¹⁾; died at the mother house of the Community, in St. Hyacinthe, the 25th July 1943 and buried the 27th in the cemetery of the Community, in St. Hyacinthe.

116 ii. Louis Joseph Arthur, born the 14th and baptized the 15th August 1875, in Joliette, married the 19th February 1901, in the St. Jacques church, in Montreal, to Marie Sophie Eugénie Labelle.

No. 69 Marie Angéline Désaulniers Cabana 1849 – 19--

Angéline Désaulniers, daughter of Laurent Désaulniers-Lesieur and Rose-Anne Bruguière, was born in Joliette, the 16th January 1849.

The 22nd May 1888, in Joliette she married Alexis Hilaire Alexandre Cabana, native of St. Cuthbert, son of Hilaire Charron dit Cabana.

The notary Alexis Cabana received his commission the 3rd October 1879 and practiced at Joliette. From his marriage with Angéline Désaulniers he had:

117 i. Joseph born about ; married the 25th September 1917, to Marie Laurette Olivier, daughter of Albert Olivier and Angélique Caisse, in Berthier.

No. 81 James Grinnell Kipp IX 1919 -

James Grinnell Kipp IX, son of George Grinnell Kipp VIII, was born about 1919. He was married but the name of his wife is unknown to us. He is professor as well as

football trainer at the Haskell Institute, in Lawrence, Kansas, United States and father of two children as follows:

118 i. Karen Kay, born about 1943.

119 ii. James, born about 1945.

No. 82 Mary Lorraine Kipp Galbraith 1922 -

Mary Lorraine Kipp, daughter of George Grinnell Kipp VIII, was born about 1922. She married Dexter Galbraith and they had four children, as follows:

120 i. Dexter, born about 1941.

121 ii. Susan Francis, born about 1943.

122 iii. Laxel Lorraine, born about 1944.

123 iv. Miriam Kipp, born about 1946.

No. 91 Georges Derome 1877 - 1940

Charles Georges Derome, son of Gustave Derome and Evéline Gadbois, was born in Salix, Iowa, United States, the 4th February 1877. After the death of his mother in 1892, he came to Canada, with the other members of the family of Gustave Derome, and lived in Joliette then later in Montreal.

He entered into a partnership with his cousin, Arthur Richard, and formed the Bookstore Ville Marie and much later entered into the service of his uncle Louis Joseph Amédée Derome.

He practiced afterwards as a public bookkeeper and for a number of years before his decease had charge of an important bookkeeping department of the city of Montreal.

The 3rd June 1907, in the church St. Jacques of Montreal, he married Marie Aline Larocque, daughter of Louis Hertel de Rouville Larocque and Lilia Yrumberry de Salaberry. By a strange coincidence, Aline Larocque was born the same day as her husband, the 4th February 1877. She was a descendant of the de Salaberry family who so often distinguished itself in the course of the history of Canada.

Charles Georges Derome died in Montreal, the 7th August 1940, at the age of 63 years, and his wife Aline Larocque died in the same location in 1949.

They had two children of which a single survived:

124 i. Georges Maurice, born the 8th June 1911; married the 16th February 1935, to Dorothy Bengle.

125 ii. Jean, born the 15th March 1918; died 15 days later.

No. 96 Rachel Derome Bonard-Filiatrault 1883 –

Rachel Derome, daughter of Gustave Derome and Evéline Gadbois, was born in Salix, Iowa, United States, the 19th July 1883. She came to Canada with the rest of the family after the decease of Mrs. Gustave Derome.

The 2nd April 1907, at the church St. Jacques, in Montreal, she married Paul Bonard, grandson of an admiral of the marines of the French Republic and son of Léon Bonard and Laurence de Solerène, of Rochefort, France.

Paul Bonard was in the employ of the house Révillon Frères Limited and was sent to Hudson Bay to take charge of a post of this French fur company in this country. His wife, Rachel Derome, was the first white woman to visit and live in the district where they were sent. Their stay at Hudson Bay lasted four or five years during which their first two children were born.

Paul Bonard was a French citizen and when the first great war of 1914-1918 broke out was called to the defense of France. He was gravely hurt in combat, in 1915 and died of his wounds two years later, at Bordeaux, the 20th December 1917. Mrs. Bonard, who had rejoined her husband, in France, lived there after his decease and went with her parent – in-laws to Rochefort, and also, after a time to Paris.

She returned to the country in 1925 and the 8th February 1927, in the church St. Nicholas d'Ahuntsic, in Montreal, she married Joseph Filiatrault, well know merchant, of Saint-Laurent Street, in Montreal. Son of Cyriac Filiatrault and Lucie Henry dit Langlois, Joseph Filiatrault was born the 20th April 1872 and was married in a first wedding to Marie Anne Turgeon who gave him eight children. He died at Montreal, the 14th September 1939, leaving Rachel Derome widow a second time.

Rachel Derome Bonard-Filiatrault lives in Montreal. Her strange life was the subject of biographical novel “Quelle Vie,” done under the pen of Adrienne Maillet, published in 1942 in Montreal.

From her first marriage, to Paul Bonard, Rachel had three children:

126 i. Jean, born the 1st of February 1908, at the East Main river, at Hudson Bay and baptized the 24th September 1911, in the church St. Louis de France, in Montreal; married the 11th November 1939, to Gabrielle Prévost, in Joliette.

127 ii. Marcel, born the 29th April 1910 at the East Main river, at Hudson Bay and baptized the 24th September 1911, in the church St. Louis de France, in Montreal; buried the 20th November 1915, in Montreal.

128 iii. Andre, baptized the 2nd July 1913, in the church St. Enfant Jésus du Mile End, in Montreal; married the 25th May 1940, to Rollande Giroux, in Chicoutimi, Quebec.

There were no children issued from the marriage of Joseph Filiatrault to Rachel Derome.

No. 98 Evéline Derome Lambert 1885 -

Evéline Derome, daughter of Gustave Derome and Evéline Gadbois was born in Salix, Iowa, United States, the 24th November 1885.

The 19th September 1911, in the church St. Louis de France, in Montreal, she married Joseph Henri Lambert, doctor, son of Gilbert Lambert and Delphine Trudel.

Doctor Lambert practiced in Brunswick, State of Maine, United States, and died there the 1st January 1934.

Joseph Henri Lambert and Evéline Derome had three children:

129 i. Jacques, baptized the 29th August 1913, in Brunswick, Maine; ordained priest the 21st March 1937, in Rome, Italy; of the community of the Pères Maristes, in Cherry Meadows, Framingham Centre, near Boston, Mass.

130 ii. Clarice, baptized the 7th December 1918, in Brunswick, Maine. Lives with her mother, in Boston, Mass., United States.

131 iii. Pierre, baptized the 6th December 1921, in Brunswick, Maine; married to a Hungarian, in Boston, Mass.

No. 103 Antoinette Leprohon Caya 1866 - 1915

Marie Joséphine Elisabeth Antoinette Leprohon, daughter of Charles Bernard Henri Leprohon and Joséphine Derome, was born and baptized in Joliette, the 24th February 1866. The 22nd May 1894, in Joliette, she married Joseph Trefflé Caya, born in 1836, widower of Euphémie Thivierge.

Mrs. Caya died in Drummondville the 24th December 1915 and Mr. Caya the 19th March 1917, at the age of 80 years and 9 months, in the same place.

They lived at Drummondville where the following children were born to them:

132 i. Marguerite, born : married the 9th April 1918, to Alexandre Nobert, in Joliette.

133 ii. Charles Thomas, born about 1895, died the 26th March 1914, in Drummondville, at the age of 18 years and 10 months.

134 iii. Jeannette, born ; married the 7th February 1927, to Clarence Beaulieu, in Woonsocket, Rhode Island, United States.

135 iv. Paul, born about ; married the 30th November 1931, to Alice Doire, in Woonsocket, Rhode Island, United States.

136 v. Louis Joseph Henri Alphonse, born ; died the 8th July 1899, in Drummondville,

137 vi. Jean Lucien, born ; died young.

138 vii. Hector, born ; died young.

No. 108 Marie Anne Leprohon Prévost 1876 -

Marie Anne Caroline Thérèse Leprohon, daughter of Charles Bernard Henri Leprohon and Joséphine Derome, was born in Joilette, the 2nd April 1876 and was baptized the same day, in the church St. Charles Borromée,

The 27th April 1903, in Joliette, she married Emile Prévost, born in Alfred, Ontario, the 8th July 1880, son of Wilfrid Prévost, doctor, and Eloise Desrochers.

He is descended from Doctor Jacques Labrie, of St. Eustache, the distinguished Canadian patriot and historian, and his grandmother was the widow of the patriot Chénier killed at St. Eustache, in 1837.

The Prévost family played an important role in the development of the town of Terrebonne as well as that of St. Jérôme and it provided a large number of eminent men.

Emile Prévost was a certified optometrist and practiced his profession in Joliette. He is also the authour of treatises on the care of the eyes.

Accomplished and talented musician, he directed the brass band and the symphony of Joliette during a great number of years.

His residence in Joliette, the former home of Louis Antoine Derome which he modernized and improved, is one of the finest in Joliette.

Emile Prévost and Marie Anne Leprohon had four children, as follows:

139 i. Gabrielle, born the 26th March 1904; married the 11th November 1939, to Jean Bonard, (q.v.)

140 ii. Anne Marie, born the 6th March 1906; married the 1st February 1927, to Dan V. McCaughey, in Joliette.

141 iii. Alice, born the 19th October 1908; married the 4th October 1943, to Pierre Paul Beaudoin, in Joliette.

142 iv. Lucie, born the 24th July 1914; married the 11th June 1945, to Jean Poitras, in Joliette.

No. 116 Arthur Richard 1875 -

Louis Joseph Arthur Richard, son of Jean Urgel Richard and Marie Hermine Derome, was born in Joliette, the 14th August 1875 and was baptized the next day in the church St. Charles Borromée, as attests the following record in the register of this parish:

“This 15 August one thousand eight hundred and seventy-five, by the priest undersigned was baptized Louis Joseph Arthur, born yesterday, legitimate son of Jean Urgel Richard, esquire, lawyer, of Drummondville, district of Arthabaska, and Lady Hermine Derome. Also present were the godfather and godmother Charles B. Leprohon, esquire, deputy sheriff of this place, and lady Joséphine Derome, his wife, who along with the father signed with us.

(Signed) Chs. B.H. Leprohon
(Signed) Joséphine D. Lerpohon
(Signed) J.U. Richard
(Signed) L.G.L. Langlois, priest.”

He completed his studies at the college Ste. Marie, of the Jesuit Fathers, in Montreal, then at the faculty of law of the University of Laval in Montreal.

He started in business by founding the “Librarie de Ville Marie,” in Montreal, with his cousin George Derome (q.v.), then later entered into the Canada Life Assurance Company of Canada where he was inspector of life-insurance during a number of years.

He was concerned later with buildings as well as finances and was a broker in municipal bonds and debentures.

The 19th February 1901, in the church St. Jacques de Montreal, he married Marie Sophie Eugénie Labelle, daughter of Jean Baptiste Hospice Labelle, inspector of grains, and Léocadie Masson.

Eugénie Labelle was born the 27th July 1874, in Montreal and baptized the next day, in the church Notre Dame, as the following extract attests:

“The twenty-eight July one thousand eight hundred and seventy-four, we, Vincent Sorin, priest of the Seminary of St. Suplice of this city, having baptized Marie Sophie Eugénie born last night, legitimate daughter of Mr. Jean Baptiste Hospice Labelle, merchant and Lady Léocadie Masson of this parish. Godfather Mr. Adolphe Masson, godmother Miss Sophis Jobin. All have signed.

(Signed) M/S/ Jobin

(Signed) Adolphe Masson
(Signed) J.B.H. Labelle
(Signed) V. Sorin, S.S.”

The marriage of Arthur Richard and Eugénie Labelle was celebrated by the abbot Arthur Derome (q.v.), uncle of the husband, in the the presence of a large number of parents and friends, as the following record demonstrates:

“The nineteen February one thousand nine hundred and one, after the publication of the ban of marriage made at the praise of our pastoral mass, with the dispense of the two other bans, accorded by Mr. Canon Alfred Archambault, vice-director of our diocese, to Louis Joseph Arthur Richard, bookseller, living in this parish, oldest son of Jean Urgel Richard, lawyer, and Hermine Derome of the parish of Drummondville, of one part; and to Marie Sophie Eugénie Labelle, living in his parish, oldest daughter of Hospice Labelle, inspector of grains, and Léocadie Masson, of this parish, of the other part; not discovering any impediment, the undersigned priests, duly authorized, having received their mutual consent of marriage and having given them the nuptial benediction in the presence of Jean Urgel Richard, father of the groom and of Hospice Labelle, father of the bride who, along with the newlyweds have signed with us, and several parents and friends. Reading completed.

(Signed) Mrs. L.J. Arthur Richard
(Signed) L.J. Arthur Richard
(Signed) J.B.H. Labelle
(Signed) J.U. Richard
(Signed) Hermine D. Richard
(Signed) L.J.A. Derome
(Signed) A.E. Labelle
(Signed) L.G. Labelle
(Signed) J.H. Labelle
(Signed) Berthe Labelle
(Signed) Marie Louise S. Labelle
(Signed) Marie Labelle
(Signed) Henriette Labelle
(Signed) Rachel Leprohon
(Signed) Antoinette Derome
(Signed) J. Amédée Derome
(Signed) G. Derome
(Signed) J. Desjardins
(Signed) J.E. Savard
(Signed) Thomas Derome
(Signed) ? Derome
(Signed) A. Derome, priest.”

Eugénie Labelle Richard died the 31st December 1946, in Montreal, and was buried in the cemetery of the Côte des Neiges the 3rd January 1947.

Arthur Richard lives in Outremont, Quebec, with his daughter Lucille Richard.

From the marriage of Arthur Richard with Eugénie Labelle were born six children and four have survived as follows:

143 i. Louis, born the 16th March 1902 and baptized the 17th in the church of St. Louis de France, in Montreal; married the 7th October 1935 to Berthe Castanier in the church St. Jean Baptiste of Montreal.

144 ii. Jean, born the 14th June 1903 and baptized the 15th in the church St. Louis de France of Montreal; died the 6th November 1903.

145 iii. Lucille, born the 22nd July 1904 and baptized the same day in the church St. Louis de France, of Montreal.

146 iv. Pierre, born the 20th July 1905 and baptized the same day in the church St. Louis de France of Montreal; married the 30th May 1936 in the chapel of the Institution des Sourdes and Muettes (Deaf and Dumb), parish of St. Louis de France, Montreal, to Louise Mathieu.

147 v. Maurice, born the 7th August 1906 in Quebec, and baptized the 10th of the same month in the church St. Jean Baptiste of Quebec; married the 26th June 1937, to Cécile Doucet, in the church of Sault de Récollet, Montreal.

148 vi. Marie, born the 30th October 1908 and baptized the 1st November in the church St. Louis de France of Montreal; died the 13th August 1909, in Montreal.

No. 124 Maurice Derome 1911 -

Georges Maurice Derome, son of Charles Georges Derome and Aline Larocque, was born in Montreal, the 8th June 1911 and was baptized in the church of St. Jacques of Montreal the same day.

The 16th February 1935, in the chapel of the Institution des Sourdes et Muettes (Deaf and Dumb), parish St. Louis de France, in Montreal, he married Dorothy Bengle, born the 5th July 1913, in Pineconning, State of Michigan, United States, daughter of Ernest Bengle and Stella Deneau.

Maurice Derome studied cabinet-making in Montreal and after several years in the business in Montreal became attached to furniture factory in Montmagny, Que.

Member of the Maisonneuve Regiment and of the army reserve for several years, he enrolled with the rank of regimental adjutant, from the beginning of hostilities in September 1939. He was promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel and commanded Canadian Regiments in action in different phases of the second great war.

He had charge of diverse special missions of high importance and at the end of the war was decorated with the medal of the Order of the British Empire.

He was present at and took part in negotiations in Holland, which lead to the surrender of the German armies in Holland to the command of the Canadian armies in this country.

After the hostilities, he was named special military advisor to the government of the Low Countries, to assist in the reorganization of the armies of this country. In this capacity, he became attached to the regimental adjutant of Prince Bernhardt and was decorated with the Order of Orange and Nassau.

His wife and children went and joined him in Holland, in November 1945, and they lived about three years in Europe and had the honour of knowing the Royal family of Holland intimately.

In 1948, Colonel Derome was named superior officer of the administration of Military District No. 4, in Montreal.

Maurice Derome and Dorothy Bengle had four children:

149 i. Marie Lilia Aline Stella Geneviève, born the 1st December 1935, in Montreal, and baptized the 7th of the same month, in St. Louis de France, Montreal; died in a Convent, in Brussels, in Belgium, about 1947 and buried in Montreal, in 1948.

150 ii. Caroline, born in June 1938, in Montmagny.

151 iii. George, born the 5th November 1943.

152 iv. -----, (a son), born in Holland and died in less than a year.

No. 126 Jean Bonard 1908 -

Jean Bonard, son of Paul Bonard and Rachel Derome, was born the 1st February 1908, at the East Main River, at Hudson Bay, and was baptized the 24th September 1911, in the church St. Louis de France, in Montreal, after the parents returned from Hudson Bay.

After the death of Paul Bonard, his father, in France, he went to live in this country, where he received his education. Reaching the military age he did his compulsory service in the French military air-force and flying became his chosen career.

On returning to Canada about 1927 he was employed in commercial aviation. Experienced pilot, he was engaged, during the second great war, by Quebec Airways Limited as instructor for teaching the art of aerial navigation to the cadets of the Royal Canadian Air-Force Corp, at the old Lorette airport, near Quebec. During the war, he continued to be involved in commercial aviation.

The 11th November 1939, in the Cathedral of Joliette, he married his cousin, Gabrielle Prévost (see No. 139), oldest daughter of Emile Prévost and Marie Anne Leprohon, of Joliette, and they had:

153 i. Anne Rachel Louise, born the 3rd June 1941, in the hospital Notre Dame of Montreal and baptized the 8th June in the parish of St. Pascal Baylon, Côte des Neiges, Montreal.

No. 128 André Bonard 1913 -

André Bonard, son of Paul Bonard and Rachel Derome, was baptized in Montreal, the 2nd July 1913, in the church St. Enfant Jésus du Mile End, in Montreal.

Like his brother Jean, he received his education at secondary school, in France, at Rochefort, and came to Canada in 1927.

He is an interior decoration contractor and lives in the town of Mont-Royal, near Montreal.

The 25th May 1940, in Chicoutimi, he married Rollande Giroux, daughter of William Giroux, well know merchant of Chicoutimi, and Blanche Boivin. They had:

154 i. Marie Rolland Andrée, baptized the 12th September 1941, in the church St. Antonin, in Montreal.

155 ii. Marie Rachel Michelle, born the 19th December 1943, in St. Mary's hospital of Montreal and baptized the 31st December in the parish St. Pascal Baylon of the Côte des Neiges, on Montreal.

156 iii. Renée, born

No. 132 Marguerite Caya Nobert

Marguerite Caya, eldest daughter of Joseph Trefflé Caya and Antoinette Leprohon, married Alexandre Nobert, the 9th April 1918, in Joliette. They reside at Point Gatineau, near Hull, Que., and have:

157 i. Fernand, born the 16th January 1920, in Drummondville, Que. Lieutenant in the Canadian army during the second great war.

158 ii. Paul André, born the 7th May 1921, in Trois-Rivières, Que.

159 iii. Yolande, born in Woonsocket, Rhode Island.

160 iv. Gisèle, born in Woonsocket, Rhode Island,

161 v. Marcel, born in Woonsocket, Rhode Island.

- 162 vi. Elizabeth, born in East Templeton, Que.
- 163 vii. Guy, born the 8th December 1929, in East Templeton, Que.
- 164 viii. Anonymous, died and buried.
- 165 ix. Louise, born the 26th September 1935, in East Templeton, Que.
- 166 x. Hélène, born the 4th February 1938, in Gatinaeu, Que.

No. 134 Jeannette Caya Beaulieu

Jeannette Caya, second daughter of Joseph Trefflé Caya, and Antoinette Leprohon, married Clarence Beaulieu, in Woonsocket, Rhode Island, United States, the 7th February 1927. They live in Woonsocket and have two children, as follows:

- 167 i. Roger, born in March 1930.
- 168 ii. Jacqueline, born in 1941.

No. 135 Paul Caya

Paul Caya, only surviving son of Joseph Trefflé Caya and Antoinette Leprohon, married Alice Doire, the 30th November 1931, in Woonsocket, Rhode Island, United States, and they had:

- 169 i. Paul, born in Woonsocket.
- 170 ii. Dorothee Hortense, born in Woonsocket.
- 171 iii. Arthur, born in September 1937, in Woonsocket.

No. 140 Anne Marie Prévost McCaughey 1906 -

Anne Marie Prévost, second daughter of Emile Prévost and Marie Anne Leprohon, was born in Joliette, the 6th March 1906.

The 1 February 1927, in Joliette, she married Dan V. McCaughey, born the 3rd March 1903, in Hensall, Ontario, son of Francis McCaughey and Theresa Kelly.

Entering into the employ of the F.W. Woolworth Company very young, he came to Joliette to manage the company store in this town and married Anne Marie Prévost.

They charged him, in 1927, to establish a new company store, on Park Avenue, in Montreal, and in 1937 confided in him the management of one of the biggest company stores, on St. Joseph Street, in Quebec, where he has been since then.

Mr. and Mrs. McCaughey are well known in Quebec where they have collaborated in many social works. Mr. McCaughey is a former president of the Rotary Club, in Quebec, and one of the most active members and a businessman well known in the old capital.

Dan V. McCaughey and Anne Marie Prévost had:

172 i. Robert, born the 16th December 1927 and baptized in the church St. Michel Archange, in Montreal.

173 ii. Frances, born the 5th November 1928 and baptized in the church St. Michel Archange, in Montreal.

174 iii. Shirley, born the 20th August 1930 and baptized in the church St. Michel Archange, in Montreal.

175 iv. Marie, born the 10th October 1932, and baptized in the church St. Raphael d'Outremont.

176 v. Eileen, born the 27th August 1934 and baptized in the church St. Raphael d'Outremont.

177 vi. Edward, born the 19th February 1936 and baptized in the church St. Raphael d'Outremont.

178 vii. Kathleen, born the 23rd August 1937 and baptized in the church St. Patrice de Quebec; died the 16th August 1938 and buried in Joliette.

No. 141 Alice Prévost Beaudoin 1908 -

Alice Prévost, third daughter of Emile Prévost and Marie Anne Leprohon, was born in Joliette, the 19th October 1908. Married the 4th October 1943, in Joliette, to Pierre Paul Beaudoin, son of Dr. Beaudoin, of Côte des Neiges, in Montreal. They live in Joliette and have:

179 i. Louis, born .

No. 142 Lucie Prévost Poitras 1914 -

Lucie Prévost, fourth daughter of Emile Prévost and Marie Anne Leprohon, was born in Joliette, the 24th July 1914. She married, the 11th June 1945, in Joliette, Jean Poitras, and they have:

180 i. -----, (a son).

No. 143 Louis Richard 1902 -

Louis Richard, oldest son of Louis Joseph Arthur Richard and Eugénie Labelle, was born in Montreal, the 16th March 1902 and was baptized the next day, 17th March, in the

church St. Louis de France in Montreal. His record of baptism in the register of this parish reads as follows:

“The seventeenth of March one thousand nine hundred and two, we, priests undersigned, have baptized Joseph Louis René, born the sixteenth of the current month, legitimate son of Louis Joseph Arthur Richard, bookseller, and Marie Sophie Eugénie Labelle, of this parish. The godfather was Hospice Labelle, inspector of grain, and the godmother Hermine Derome, grandmother of the child, who along with the father have signed with us. Reading completed.

(Signed) H. Labelle
(Signed) Hermine Derome
(Signed) L.J.A. Richard
(Signed) A. Derome, priest. ”

He made his studies at the Catholic High School, in Montreal, and at the University of McGill where he obtained the diploma of chartered accountant.

He was a longtime employee of the firm Gonthier and Midgley, chartered accountants of Montreal, then practiced for several years under the name and firm of Midgley, Richard and Co.

In 1935, he went into the Federal Government in the office of the Auditor General of Canada and during the second great war was, after some time, assistant to the deputy minister of National Defense, in Ottawa, then following, again for the office of the Auditor General, was in charge of the verification of the accounts of the Crown corporations, in Montreal and Quebec.

The 1st July 1946, His Majesty George VI awarded him the decoration of Member of the Order of the British Empire in appreciation of services rendered during the war.

The 1st February 1947, he was named treasurer of the War Assets Corporation, Crown Corporation, and was promoted to controller of the organization the 1st February 1948. In January 1950, he became director as well as vice president, the name of this organism having changed, in December 1949, to that of the Crown Assets Disposal Corporation – La Corporation de Disposition des Biens de la Couronne.

He is a member of the Montreal Board of Trade, of the Chamber of Commerce of the District of Montreal, of the Canadian Club of Ottawa and of the Institute of Chartered Accountants of the Province of Quebec. He is also a member of the Historical Society of Montreal (La Société Historique de Montréal) and of the French Canadian Genealogical Society (La Société Généalogique Canadienne-Française) and has published several historical and genealogical works.

Amateur of the game of chess, he has participated in several tournaments, winning the championship of the city of Montreal in 1932, that of the city of Quebec, in 1937 and

obtained the second prize in the tournament for the championship of the city of Ottawa in 1950. He also won second prize in the championship for Canada in 1932.

The 7th October 1935, in the church St. Jean Baptiste of Montreal, he married Berthe Castanier, widow of Léopold Blanchard and daughter of Dosithé Castanier, and Salomé Quenneville, formerly of St. Anicet, Que. The record of this marriage reads as follows:

“The seven October one thousand nine hundred and thirty-five, seeing the dispensation of the publication of the three bans of marriage granted by right to Louis Richard, accountant, of Quebec, oldest son of Arthur Richard, and Eugénie Labelle of Ahuntsic, of one part; and to Berthe Castanier, of this parish, widow of Léopold Blanchard, of the other part; not having discovered any impediment to this marriage, we, parish priest undersigned, have requested and received their mutual consent of marriage in the presence of Arthur Richard, father and witness of the groom, and of Avila Beauchesne, brother-in-law and witness of the bride, who along with the couple have signed with us. The parties have declared that they have signed a marriage contract before Master Rosaire Dupuis, notary public of Montreal. Reading made.

(Signed) Berthe Castanier
(Signed) Louis Richard
(Signed) Avila Beauchesne
(Signed) Arthur Richard
(Signed) Gérard Bergevin, priest.”

At the time of his marriage, Louis Richard lived in Quebec, where he had charge of certain verifications of accounts, for the federal government in comparison with the Provincial authorities of Quebec. They lived again in Montreal afterwards and are residents of Ottawa since 1949.

From her marriage to Léopold Blanchard, Berthe Castanier had a son, Pierre Blanchard, born in Montreal, the 14th May 1931.

No. 145 Lucile Richard 1904 –

Lucile Richard, only daughter of Arthur Richard and Eugénie Labelle, was born the 22nd July 1904, in Montreal, and was baptized the same day in the church St. Louis de France, in Montreal.

She studied with the Sisters of Saints Noms de Jésus et de Marie, in Montreal, and at Sir George William College where she obtained a diploma in foreign languages.

She taught privately Spanish and Portuguese as well as French and English and also knows Italian.

Having entered into the service of Radio-Canada several years ago, she is now secretary of the Spanish section of Radio-Canada International broadcasts directed towards South America.

No. 146 Pierre Richard 1905 –

Pierre Richard, second son of Arthur Richard and Eugénie Labelle, was born in Montreal, the 20th July 1905 and was baptized the same day in the church St. Louis de France, in Montreal. He terminated his studies at the Catholic High School, in Montreal, and entered into business.

He was first in the employ of the firm J. Alex Gordon and Co., exclusive selling agents, in Montreal of the products of the St. Lawrence Sugar Refineries limited, Canadian Cannery limited and other manufacturers of commodity foods. After the closing of this firm he moved to the St. Lawrence Sugar Refineries Limited where he is since, having acquired an experience of more than 25 years in the sugar business in Montreal.

During the second great war, his services were required by the federal government and the controller of sugar for directing the rationing of this commodity to the manufacturers, industries and religious institutions and others in the Province of Quebec.

After the war, he resumed his functions at the St. Lawrence Sugar Refineries Limited, in Montreal, where he occupied an important post in the sales service of this company.

The 30th May 1936, in the chapel of the Institution des Sourdes Muettes (Deaf and Dumb) serving the parish church for the parish of St. Louise de France of Montreal since the burning of this church, in 1933, he married Louise Mathieu, daughter of Eugène Mathieu and Maud Jobin. They have five sons, as follows:

- 181 i. Pierre, born the 12th December 1938.
- 182 ii. Mathieu, born the 21st November 1940.
- 183 iii. Jean, born the 15th June 1942.
- 184 iv. Louis, born the 31st August 1944.
- 185 v. Raymond, born the 4th April 1946.

No. 147 Maurice Richard 1906 –

Maurice Richard, third son of Arthur Richard and Eugénie Labelle, was born in Quebec, the 7th August 1906 and was baptized the 10th of the same month in the church St. Jean Baptiste of Quebec.

He studied at the Ecole Supérieure St. Louis, in Montreal, then at the classical college des Clercs de St. Viateur in Rigaud, and finally at the University of McGill in Montreal, where he obtained the diploma of chartered accountant.

After a probationary period at the Canadian National Bank, he entered the firm of Midgley, Richard and Co., then after several years went into the employ of the important firm McDonald, Curie and Co., chartered accountants which he left, about 1945, to

establish in his own reckoning, a partnership with his Hurtubise cousins, under the name of Hurtubise and Richard, well know firm of chartered accountants, in Montreal.

The 26th June 1937, in the church du Sault au Récollet, in Montreal, he married Cécile Doucet, daughter of Joseph Edouard Doucet and Edesse Lapierre, and they have:

186 i. Louise, born the 18th April 1943.

(1) Rev. P. Alexis de Barbezieux, Capucin, Histoire de la Province Ecclésiastique d'Ottawa, Ottawa, 1897, pages 146-7.

(2) idem.

(3) See "Mère Elizabeth Bruyère et son Oeuvre," (Mother Elizabeth Bruyere and her works) by the reverend sister Paul Emile, Ottawa, 1945, page 20. On the subject of the spelling of her name, the reverend sister Paul Emile says, page 393: "About 1824, the parish registers, in Canada, wrote indifferently Bruguier or Bruyère. The French branch of the family retained Bruguier." See also pages 208 and 209 of the same work for other details of this family.

(4) On an historic monument, between Howick and Ormstown, on highway number 4 from Montreal to Malone, we find the following inscription:

"The Defense of the Chateauguay ford."

"Here the 26 October 1813, a company of militia, Captain Charles Daly, and a company of riflemen of Chateauguay, Captain Jean B. Bruyere, appointed to the defense of the ford, were assailed by superior forces and covered themselves in glory by their obstinate resistance."

The above refers to Jean Baptiste Bruguière, of Chateauguay, half brother of Médard Bruguière, sons of Jean Baptiste Bruguière, of Assomption, and Elizabeth Sincennes.

(5) The newspaper "Le Pays," of Montreal, announced the death, which happened at Industrie, the 1 February 1855, of Jean Baptist Bruguière, 16 years, son of Théophile Bruguière, who came from Assomption, and is now from the upper Missouri, United States.

J.C.C. Hoskins, biographer of Théophile Bruguière mentioned in Chapter IX, said his son Jean Baptiste died young and that he was buried at Fort Vermillion but it is without doubt this young man in question in the record of interment following which appeared in the register of the parish St. Charles Borromée, city of Joliette, on the date of 2 February 1855:

"This second day of February one thousand eight hundred and fifty five, by the undersigned priests was buried in the cemetery of this parish the body of Jean Baptiste Bruyère, resident of the area, died before yesterday aged seventeen years, son of

Théophile Buryère, trader of the Rocky Mountains and of Marie Laigle. Witnesses François Payette, and Joseph Brouillet who could not undersign.
(Signed) Ant. Manseau, priest

(6) *Larpenteur, Forty Years a Trader on the Upper Missouri*, edited by Elliott Coues, published by Frances P. Harper, Vol. I, p. 217 and Vol. II, note on page 246. See also: *Gazetteer of Pioneers and Others in North Dakota previous to 1862*, in *Collections of the State Historical Society of North Dakota*.

(7) See: *Journal of Rudolph Friederich Kurs*. Bulletin 115, Bureau of American Ethnology. Washington, D.C., 1927.

(8) Rév. P. De Smet, *Voyages aux Montagnes-Rocheuses chez les tribes indiennes du vaste territoire de l'Ouest*, Lille, France, 1850.

(9) Her godfather was Doctor Pierre Charles Loedel, her great grandfather, and her godmother Mrs. Médard Bruguière, born Elisabeth Kipp, her great grandmother.

(10) The newspaper "LE PAYS" of Montreal, said, the 6 February 1866; "M. J. Urgel Richard, of Joliette, was admitted yesterday to the practice of the profession of a lawyer, after a most brilliant examination and which gave him great honour. We wish him all of the success that his talents merit.

(11) Sister Marie of the Rosary made her religious profession in 1894. She was manager of the following houses of the Community of the Sisters of the Présentation de Marie; Mareville, 1909-1916; Granby, 1916-1922; Acton Vale, 1922-1926; Farnham, 1926-1929; Boarding School of the Mother House, St. Hyacinthe, 1929-1933; Academy Notre Dame de Lorette, St. Hyacinthe, 1937-1938; St. Georges d'Henryville, 1942 to April 1943.

Chapter VIII

James Kipp

James Kipp VI, eldest son of Samuel Kipp V and Mary Knapp, was born the 15th of March 1788 ⁽¹⁾ and was baptized at the Anglican church of the City of Quebec, the 30th of August 1789, by Reverend Philip Toosey.

In the register of baptisms of this church, we can read the following inscription:
“1789 – James son of Samuel and Mary Kipp baptized Aug. 30th.”

He left his family very young to be a fur trader in the west and they say that from the year 1808 he was a trapper on the Red River ⁽²⁾ and ⁽³⁾.

His first stay in the west was of short duration because in 1813 he returned to Kingston, in Upper Canada, where his brother Samuel had become a merchant about this time.

The War of 1812 between the United States on one side and England and Canada on the other side must have had certain repercussions on the fur business in the west and it was, without doubt, the cause of the return of James Kipp to his native country.

The 23rd of June 1813, before the Reverend George Okill Stuart, he married, at the Anglican Church of Saint George, in Kingston, Elizabeth Rocheleau, baptized the 17th of January 1794, at the Church of Notre Dame in Montreal, daughter of François Xavier Rocheleau ⁽⁴⁾ and Marie Louise Miville.

The young married couple arrived in Montreal shortly thereafter and James Kipp became a contract carpenter, joiner and mason. In April 1815, they lived in the Tanneries of Belair (Saint Henry) ⁽⁵⁾, where James Kipp previously had lived with his mother and his brothers and sisters, but in June 1815 they were residents of the suburb of Saint Laurent ⁽⁶⁾, where the uncle of James Kipp, Moses Knapp lived.

We know of only two children born in Canada to James Kipp and his wife Elizabeth Rocheleau.

A daughter, Mary, probably the eldest, because she carries the same first name as her grand mother Mary Knapp, appears to have been raised by her uncle and aunt Médard Bruguière and Elizabeth Kipp, in Assomption, where she married Louis Gustave de Lorimier, in 1843.

The other child, a daughter named Louise Charlotte, was born the 10th of August 1815 and was baptized the next day, the 11th of August 1815, at the church Notre Dame in Montreal, and had for a godfather the notary Joseph Désautels, her uncle, husband of Charlotte Kipp, sister of James Kipp. Is it this latter who became Madame Weagent?

The 10th of June 1816 ⁽⁷⁾, James Kipp still resided in the suburb of Saint Laurent, in Montreal, but by the 17th of March 1817 ⁽⁸⁾, he had already left the city, having probably proceeded to Kingston, where he is to be found again in February 1818.

The 6th of February 1818, he is listed traveling to Montreal to conclude several matters with compromises ⁽⁹⁾, and this is the last mention that we can find for him in our neighbourhoods.

James Kipp arrived in Missouri in 1818, after having traveled through in his journey the territory which is today the state of Minnesota. He was engaged immediately after his arrival by the Columbia Fur Company and was sent as clerk to a trading post of this company with the Mandanes ⁽¹⁰⁾.

Meanwhile, the 3rd of September 1821, we find him at Fort Douglas (today Winnipeg) on the Red River, where he signed a proxy to his mother, Mary Knapp Kipp, to authorize her to come to a compromise in his name, in Montreal, on the subject of Crown lands granted to Samuel Kipp and his children in 1806 in the canton of Eardley, county of Hull, in Lower Canada ⁽¹¹⁾.

In 1822, Kipp is named agent at Fort Clark, the company post in the country of the Mandans in an area which is called the five villages on the Missouri, about 8 miles downstream from the mouth of the Big Knife River at several miles higher than the actual site of the city of Bismarck, state of North Dakota.

James Kipp lived there thirteen years, until 1835, and was the first white to learn and to speak fluently the language of the Mandan red skins. Six feet two inches tall, with blue eyes and brown hair, and straight as an arrow, he had an imposing physique, which commanded the respect of these indigenous people, with whom he became moreover a sincere friend.

He was one of the best agents of the company who charged him with the management of all their fur business with the Mandans.

He also established, during his stay at Fort Clark some new posts for the company, with other tribes of savages on the Missouri, and he constructed a fort at the White Earth River in 1825, and another, Fort Piegan, in the country of the Blackfeet in 1831.

Meanwhile, about 1827, the Columbia Fur Company was absorbed by a rival company, the American Fur Company, and it is in the employ of the latter that James Kipp continued business after this date.

In 1832, George Catlin, American painter and author of works on the customs and costumes of the aborigines of the American West, come to visit Fort Clark and lived with James Kipp, who helped him in his research both scientific and artistic.

Kipp said, in speaking of this visit:

“In the summer of 1832, Mr. George Catlin was a guest in my fort at the Mandan village, observing and learning the customs of the interesting and peculiar people, and painting the portraits of their celebrated men, of which he had many and with great exactness.”⁽¹²⁾

Kipp and Catlin maintained, from then on, very amicable relations.

The following year, 1833, another visitor of note passed through Fort Clark. The German Prince, Alexander Philippe Maximilian of Wied-Neuwied, made a stop in the course of a study trip across the American “Far West,” and in his narrative of the trip he describes an interview at Fort Clark with several Mandan Chiefs, and he says: “... the pipe went round, and the conversation began with the Mandans, by the assistance of Mr. Kipp, clerk of the American Fur Company and the director of the trading post at Fort Clark.”⁽¹³⁾

James Kipp left Fort Clark about 1835 and was dispatched to the upper Missouri, among the Black Feet, where he was charged with the construction of Fort McKenzie, which today is in the state of Montana.

Donaldson states that James Kipp abandoned the service of the American Fur Company, about 1834 and operated on his own account on the Missouri. This seems very doubtful because it was this company which charged him, about 1835, with the construction of Fort McKenzie.⁽¹⁴⁾

It is possible that Kipp had intentions of this kind, because in 1838, he placed his headquarters to the east in the County of Platte, on the Missouri, about ten miles to the north of the actual city of Kansas City.

But in 1843 he is in charge of another of the company’s fort, Fort Alexander, on the Yellowstone River, where the naturalist Audubon paid him a visit.

The 22nd of July 1844, he purchased from Hubert Raubeau and his wife Marie Anne the western half of the North West quarter of section 8-51-33, in the Platte County, for the sum of five hundred dollars. The 28th of August 1844, he added to this the South East quarter of section 5-51-33, purchased from Honoré Picotte and his wife Thérèse.

It is from this farm that he organized his expeditions to the upper regions later on and from where he directed, during the good season, business and sales.

In 1845, James Kipp appears to still be in the service of the American Fur Company, because he is in charge of this company’s post at Fort Union.

During this period in Canada, James Kipp, sends his news to his relatives, that is to say corresponds with them and on occasion we find records where his name appears. The 23rd of March 1839, he appears before a notary public by the name of P. Walsh at Saint Louis, Missouri and, declaring himself a resident of this city, authorizes his daughter Mary of Assomption to act in his name.

The 15th of July 1843, Mary Kipp of Assomption declares that her father, James Kipp, is of Saint Louis, Missouri.⁽¹⁵⁾ We can understand easily why James Kipp, who traveled the Missouri from one end to the other, that is to say over the length of almost 1,500 miles, and who travelled with the demands of business, would determine his residence, from a legal point of view, at Saint Louis, the centre of business for the fur trade and the site of the business offices of the companies who operated on the Missouri.

After 1844, James Kipp could say he was residing at Barry, a little village in Platte County, near where his farm is situated.

In 1849 the rush towards California in search of gold began and we know that James Kipp was among those who invaded this state in search of a rapid and easy fortune. He does not appear to have been very happy in this adventure and we find him soon returning to the fur trade on the Missouri.

In the summer of 1851 he is in charge of Fort Berthold, again in the country of the Mandans. It is in this place that he received a visit from a young Swiss naturalist painter, Rudolph Friederich Kurz, who he employed as a clerk for around two months.

Kurz left a journal of his adventures with the fur traders and the savages of the west and this narration, including a stay of two months with James Kipp, with whom he lived in close proximity, constitutes an interesting eyewitness of the character of Kipp.⁽¹⁶⁾

James Kipp was the first man to pilot a steam boat on the Missouri River, around 1840, and he was very familiar with this water course due to having navigated it for many years, for which he was called Captain Kipp.

In June of each year, at the flooding of the waters of the Missouri River, Captain Kipp descended with his boats filled with furs from the upper regions to Saint Louis to sell them. He traveled sometimes with as many as twenty or thirty boats, and even more, each carrying a load of five tons.

The sale was made in the summer and in autumn Kipp returned to his farm at Barry to see to the preparations for the return to the Upper Missouri in the springtime.

It was necessary to procure horses and equipment to transport the merchandise, to the high country from the quays to the Indian villages where the business was done, that is to say the exchange of merchandise imported from Saint Louis for the furs of the savages, and it was necessary to transport the former to the boats, all this transport must necessarily be done on the back of a horse.

Captain Kipp was a well known figure on the Missouri River and made frequent voyages on all his runs. The journal "Liberty Tribune" on the 29th of July 1853, announces the arrival of the captain at Liberty, the place closest to his farm at Barry along the Missouri, and speaks of him in these terms:

Late from the Mountains

“The steamer Robt. Campbell arrived at our wharf last Friday from the Mountains. She has been absent sixty-five days. The Campbell is one of our swiftest boats, and some idea of the vast regions above may be conceived from the time she has been steaming on our might[y] river. She was 150 miles above the mouth of the Yellowstone. She had a fine run. Capt. Kip, a veteran mountain trader, came down on the Campbell and is sojourning a few days with us. His family reside a few miles in the country. From him we learn that the water in the upper river near the mountains has been four feet higher than ever known before, owing to the deep snow in the mountains. He says they have had only light seasonal rain in the spring and scarcely a drop during the month of June. Those of us who have seen the immense volume of water rushing by continually for the last five months have often made the anxious enquiry “Where does all this water come from?” The answer is now given from the masses of snow melting in the gorges of the Rocky Mountains, on the upper sources of the river. Capt. Kip says the upper Indians who always plant their corn in the bottoms have had it all destroyed by the floods. Had not a kind Providence suspended the usual rains all the bottoms below must have been swept. The snow had not all melted in the mountains when he left. He says that the soil in the uplands above the mouth of the Little Missouri is poor, not much fit for cultivation. He says they raise fine potatoes, Indian corn (six weeks variety), peas, beans, oats, wheat, and most garden vegetables in the bottoms. They have no strawberries, blackberries, or raspberries, as yet, but wild turnips, choke cherries, wild onions, and service berries are abundant. They have a wild currant which is a handsome flowering shrub, with large fine fruit. They also have a few wild grapes and some choice wild plumbs lower down. He says there are some considerable bodies of pine in the mountains but owing to falls, rocks, and rapids cannot be gotten out, but lower down there are occasional patches of cedar and pine but no extensive bodies.”

“Trade has been good at the Forts although the Indians could not go out much into the mountains after Buffalo. The intense cold and deep snows drove them down from the mountains to the lower bottoms where the Indians usually encamp and the deep snow enabled them to catch them easily. Thus Providence in his great natural operations brought food to the poor Indians in one of the most inclement seasons, when the arm of the mighty hunter could not reach it. He says he was overtaken by snow storms on the 5th and 6th of November last on his way up about 400 miles north of this and traveled most of the balance of the way in deep snow. The severe snow killed some of his horses, and on one occasion in a large prairie he was overtaken by a heavy snow-storm when his compass became injured and would not traverse. The wind swept with violence over the black prairie -- it was dark, he could see but a little distance -- it was impossible to tell what course to steer. Destruction seemed inevitable, when he broke open a trunk and found a small compass a friend had stowed away for him. With this they took their course, and after traveling twenty miles, reached the point of a mountain where there was some brush. The perils of the mountain men would fill volumes with wonderful tales. Capt. Kip says a good outfit was prepared for Governor Stevens and his surveying expedition at Fort Union, mouth of the Yellowstone. He had not arrived when he left. The Capt. thinks way-business on a railroad through that region will never be very

heavy.”

James Kipp did business on the Missouri until 1865 and then retired to his farm at Barry, in the County of Platte, where he farmed.

An educated man, he had kept a written journal of his experiences during the almost 40 years that he had passed among the savages. He had also accumulated a large quantity of objects and curios from the Indians and had made a sort of museum in his farmhouse at Barry. All of these objects perished, one night in 1870, when his home was destroyed by a fire.

In 1872, the Government of the United States, when considering the purchase of certain paintings and drawings of the naturalist painter George Catlin, for the National Museum in Washington, made enquiries of James Kipp to assure itself of the authenticity of the customs and ceremonies represented by these scenes which for the most part had been completed at the Mandan village where Kipp had charge of the business operations in former years.

James Kipp made a deposition, at Barry, before Dan Carpenter, notary public, also postmaster of this place, in which he certifies the truthfulness, put in doubt by certain persons, of the somewhat barbaric scenes, which made up the subjects of these pieces.

On the subject of this incident, the annual report of the Smithsonian Institute, for the year 1885, reproduces the text of a letter addressed to the president by James Kipp, the 12th of August 1872, which text makes the subject of Appendix XII of the present work.

Although aged 88 years, he went back up the Missouri one more time, in 1876, and visited the Mandan village and Fort Benton, staying in these regions the whole summer and part of the autumn. He was received warmly by the Mandans, who believed him dead for a long time. “The old men and women fell upon my neck, kissed me and wept,” he reported, and they gave him numerous gifts.

He returned to Barry the same autumn and lived there until his death.

He was a lover of fine horses and went riding on horseback constantly. A contemporary reports that six weeks before his death, at the age of 92 years, he was still riding in this fashion as alert as a young man.

James Kipp died the 2nd of July 1880, at the home of a friend. A.C. Woods, at Barry, and was buried in the old cemetery of Parkville, County of Platte, in the State of Missouri.

By will, dated the 18th of May 1868, with a codicil of the 6th of September 1877, he left his property, in equal parts to his son Joseph Kipp of Fort Benton, Montana, his daughter, Margaret Weagent, of Montreal, and Julia Kipp, daughter of his son Samuel deceased.

James Kipp was considered by the American historians as a pioneer of the west and the

William Andrews Clark Memorial Library of the University of California, at Los Angeles, preserves a stock of documents and pieces relating to him. This fonds is available to researchers.

A journalist and historian of Kansas City, Missouri, Clyde H. Porter, did a lot of research on James Kipp and much of the information contained in this study is due to his gracious amiability.

Kipp's memory is commemorated in the west in two places. On geographic maps one finds, in Montana, the name of Kipp given to a post office in the area where formerly was erected Fort Kipp and in Alberta, not far from Lethbridge, there is also a post office of the name of Kipp, the latter on the whole commemorating his son Joseph.

The newspaper "Kansas City Daily Times" published the following eulogy of James Kipp in its issue of Thursday 15 July 1880:

The First River Captain

Death of Capt. James Kip, of Platte County, an old time river captain who was commander of the first steamboat that plied the Missouri. A long and eventful life but rest at last. Reminiscences of his river life.

It's almost if not quite half a century since the first steam-boat worked its laborious way through the murkey waters of the Missouri north of Kansas City. The name of the steamer is forgotten, but the man who commanded it has just passed away in the person of Capt. James Kip, of Platte County, who for many years has resided near the old town of Barry, formerly an important town on the old military road between Omaha and Liberty.

At the time that steamer passed north all this country was a complete wilderness. In fact from an old map dated 1840 it is shown the entire Platte Purchase, then just laid off and opened for settlement, was at that date almost devoid of settlement and population. From Liberty Landing there was nothing on the River until the present city of Parkville was reached, where was located Park's Store and just north of it Winston's Store. Next, opposite Fort Leavenworth, was the Kickapoo Indian Reservation, then came Weston and Latan. St. Joe was known as Roubideaux's Store, and north of that to Omaha there was not a settlement, and that was but forty years ago. Kansas City, Leavenworth, Atchison, and St. Joseph, now with a combined population of not less than a hundred and fifty thousand souls, then had no mark or habitation on the earth's surface, and it was just prior to the date of this map that Captain Kip made his first trip up the river, and he lived to see all the wonderous changes wrought by man and time.

For the next eight or ten years he followed steam-boating but when the gold rush swept over the country, he became a full fledged "forty-niner" and went with the army of gold hunters to the "fields." He was not one of the successful ones, although his life at the time was full of adventures. He returned after a few years to his old stamping grounds on

the Platte Purchase from which he made frequent excursions to the far north often commanding fleets of what were in those days known as “mountain boats,” that is flat boats loaded with furs and spoils of the far north, the fruits of barter with the Indians for glass beads, fire-water, and trinkets. It was from one of these trips that he brought home with him a half-breed wife, by whom he raised a large family now among the best families of Platte County. During all those years his life was full of wild adventure and hair-breadth escapes. Many attempts had been made to interview him in relation to those but without avail. His invariable reply was, “I will leave the documents so they can be used when I am gone,” and it is believed that during the last years of his life he prepared a full history of his adventures.

In regard to his early life, birth and parentage, he was equally uncommunicative but his parents are believed to have been descendants of the early Dutch settlers along the Hudson, who, afterwards, migrated into Pennsylvania, Virginia, and Kentucky, and an ancestry renowned for its restless spirit, and which can trace direct lineage to the royal house of Hanover.

Up to the last weeks of his life Capt. Kipp was a very active man, and an excellent rider. But a short time since he broke a colt that none dared to mount and rode it many miles reducing it to complete subjection. He was apparently strong and vigorous almost to the last week of his death, which occurred about ten days ago. His funeral was very quiet, his remains being deposited in the little graveyard a mile north of Parkville.

(1) Thomas Donaldson, in Appendix V, Annual Report of the Board of Regents of the Smithsonian Institution, July 1885, Part II, Washington, 1886, page 381, said that James Kipp was born near Montreal, of French parents, the 15th of March 1788. On the other hand, James Kipp himself, in a letter to Professor Henry of the Smithsonian, dated the 12th of August 1872, and reproduced on the same page, said that he is “in the eighty-fifth year of my own age.”

(2) Gazetteer of pioneers and Others in North Dakota Previous to 1862, Collections of the State Historical Society of North Dakota, Vol. I, page 368.

(3) Hiram Martin Chittenden, in *The American Fur Trade of the Far West*, New York, 1902, mentions James Kipp and says that he was one of the pioneers of this business. See Vol. I, pp. 324, 334, 389 (biog.), Vol. II, p. 673, and Vol. III, p. 961.

(4) François Xavier Rocheleau is “clerk, Kingston Dockyard” in the provincial marines, during the War of 1812-1814, and he received a grant of land called “Prince Regent’s Bounty” in recognition of his services according to L. Homfray Irving, *Officers of the British Forces in Canada during the War of 1812/15*, Welland, 1908, page 205. A.H. Young, in *The Parish Register of Kingston, Upper Canada, 1785-1811*, Kingston, 1921, page 90, said: Francis Xavier Rochleau claimed in 1797 Lot 98 in Kingston (D.W. Smith Papers Vol. B 10p. 184). According to the Church accounts he had the contract for the

stone wall around the church yard and the burying ground in 1800 and 1808-9. He served as a constable in 1802.”

(5) Office of Joseph Désautels, notary of Montreal, 18 April 1815, document 1554.

(6) Office of Désautels, 7 June 1815.

(7) Office of Désautels, 10 June 1816.

(8) Office of André Jobin, notary at Montreal, 17 March 1817, document 748.

(9) Office of Désautels. 6 February 1818.

(10) Reuben Gold Thwaites, LL.D. – Notes concerning James Kipp, mentioned by the Prince Alexandre Philippe Maximilien de Wied-Neuwied in “Travels in the Interior of North America,” translated from German by Hannibal Evans Lloyd and published in “Early Western Travels,” Cleveland, 1906, Vol. XXII, p. 345.

(11) These lands were not sold until 1834 but the grant to James Kipp, dated in 1821, is mentioned in the record of sale by Mary Knapp, et al., to William Cormack, the 22nd of February 1834, at the office of Joseph Hilarion Jobin, notary at Montreal.

(12) Letter by James Kipp to Professor Henry of the Smithsonian Institute, 12 August 1872.

(13) Travels in the Interior of North America, by Maximilian, Prince of Wied, translated from the German by Hannibal Evans Lloyd, in Early Western Travels, by Reuben Gold Thwaites, LL.D., Cleveland, 1906, Vol. XXII.

(14) Martha Edgerton Plassman, The Froid Tribune, Great Falls, Montana, 12 September 1924.

(15) Office of Joseph Hilarion Jobin, 15 July 1843, document 3938.

(16) Journal of Rudolph Friederich Kurz, an Account of His Experience Among Fur Traders and American Indians on the Mississippi and the Upper Missouri Rivers during the Years 1846 to 1852, translated by Myrtis Jarrell, Edited by J.N.B. Hewitt, published for the Smithsonian Institution, as Bulletin 115 of the Bureau of American Ethnology, by the United States Government Printing Office, Washington, D.C., 1937.

Chapter IX

Théophile Bruguière⁽¹⁾

Théophile Bruguière, son of Médard Bruguière and Elizabeth Kipp, was born 31 August 1813, at Assomption, and died 18 February 1896 at Salix, Iowa, United States, after a life of adventure which recalls that of his uncle James Kipp, in the American west.

His biographer suggests that he left the province of Quebec, then Lower Canada, because of a love affair, but it is more probable that the stories of his uncle Kipp about his life among the Indians of the west had much more to do with Théophile Bruguière's decision to leave the country.

On the paternal side, Théophile Bruguière was the grandson of Jean Baptist Bruguière dit Bélair, captain of the militia, who arrived from France in 1750 originally from Pont-Saint-Esprit, diocese of Saint-Paul-Trois-Châteaux.

His uncle, Jean Baptiste Bruguière, had been parish priest of the parish of Chateauguay, for several years and his first cousin, Elizabeth Bruguière, none other than the venerable Mother Bruyère⁽²⁾ founder of the community of the Gray Sisters of Ottawa (Soeurs Grises d'Ottawa).

Another of his uncles, Jean B. Bruguière, half brother of the parish priest of Chateauguay, was one of the heroes of the defense of the ford of Chateauguay in 1813.⁽³⁾

Théophile Bruguière was thus the descendant of a brave French Canadian Catholic family but the taste of adventure drew him far from his heritage and perhaps also his religion. His life was a veritable novel of the American far west.

Several American authors have detailed his exploits but it seems that an article of 23 pages under the name of J.C. Hoskins, with a portrait of Burguière, was the most complete. This article, edited by Constant R. Marks, another biographer of Bruguière, appeared in a volume entitled "Pioneering in the Northwest – Niobrara – Virginia City Wagon Road – by Albert M. Holman – Pioneers, Short Sketches of Charles Floyd, War Eagle, Theophile Bruguiere and others – by Constant R. Marks," published by Deitch and Lamar Co., Sioux City, Iowa, United States, in 1924.

So, to recount the exploits of Théophile Bruguière one could not do better than to reproduce in this chapter the complete text of the article without translation. The original text follows:

Sketch of Life of Theophile Bruguiere

By J.C.C. Hoskins

Edited by C.R. Marks

The following sketch of the life of Theophile Bruguier, the pioneer settler of Sioux City, is principally the composition of J.C.C. Hoskins, one of the early residents of Sioux City, and a most noted scholar. It was prepared by request for the Sioux City Academy of Science and Letters. Mr. C.R. Marks had taken down written interviews with L.D. Letellier and Joseph Leonais who had been traders up the Missouri River with Bruguier, and with Mr. O.O. Tredway, who had been interested with him in later years in trading projects, and had a long intimate acquaintance with him. Mr. Marks furnished Mr. Hoskins with these interviews.

This biography is written by Mr. Hoskins as a relation by himself, and in the first person, and is practically given here, almost entire, as being the best account ever likely to be written. In order to give all the angles and episodes of Bruguier's life for record in print, additional information has been added, including an account of a trading trip to Fort Pierre, in 1860, written by Louis D. Letellier, an early French settler, and up river trader. This is in Mr. Letellier's French dialect and spelling.

These are inserted at intervals in the course of Mr. Hoskin's article and easily distinguished from it, as not being in the first person.

Other matter is also added. These insertions are mostly enclosed in brackets.

In May 1857, I first saw that remarkable man, Theophile Bruguier. He was living with his people around him, a veritable sultan with his harem and his subjects. His word was law with the Indians, who frequented his ranch, and through him much intercourse and business seemed to be carried on with the white people of the vicinity. He was then in the prime of life. He was of medium height, but of athletic build, and quick in motion as a "loup cervier" in his native forest. His head was well formed, his hair black and abundant, his beard was magnificent and "Oh, but he was handsome," was the exclamation of a lady who knew him well in those days, when I questioned her some years ago. Indeed he was a man of splendid physique with eyes of wonderful intensity, gentle and fascinating in social intercourse with friends, but terrible in wrath in conflict with enemies. It was evident that among his people he must have been much loved and deeply feared. It was said that he never knew fear, and to me this seems likely true. The late O.C Tredway, his lawyer for many years and associated in some business enterprises, had his confidence and knew him most intimately in his later years. He says of him in a recorded interview with our president, Mr. C.R. Marks: "He was very bright and would have made his mark in the world.....Had it not been for his early loss it is hard to tell what he might have become.....bright and educated as he was in his youth. He really was a wonderful man." To me he appears to have been endowed with many qualities necessary to the great man – the man who leads armies, or controls and molds communities. Something, however, must have been lacking in his mental makeup; or was it indeed the circumstances of his early life that consigned him to the society of savages – that made him virtually a savage himself during all the period of early manhood down to middle life, and so shackled him with habits and obligations that he could not re-enter civilization with full use of the powers given him by birth. He was born in the parish of L'Assumpcion⁽⁴⁾ on the St. Lawrence River a little below Montreal,

August 31, 1813, the son of Madrid⁽⁵⁾ and Elizabeth (Keep)⁽⁶⁾ Bruguier. His father was French, his mother English and both were of Catholic faith. It is worth notice here that Mr. Tredway calls Bruguier really an Englishman, stating that his own mother and his paternal grandmother were of English blood, leaving for Bruguier at most only one quarter a Celt – his character, his courage, his bull dog persistence were altogether English. For myself I find in him a pretty strong infusion of Mercurial French easily raised to fever heat, but rarely rising beyond control of his cooler English element. The parents were farmers of good family and connection, intelligent and well to do for that region, where all were poor as we now reckon poverty.

I can say little of them or of other members of the family, only I knew a brother-in-law sixty-five years ago. I was principal of a New England academy in those days and my old French tutor sent me from Canada three young men to be taught the English language and prepared for college. Two of them went from my school to Harvard college. Louis Leon Lesueuer Des Aulniers⁽⁷⁾ took the degree of M.D. and became noted in Canada professionally and politically, having held a prominent position in the provincial government as member of the cabinet. He married a sister of Bruguier⁽⁸⁾, and a son once came to Sioux City and brought me a message from his father with whom I had carried on a correspondence for some years in the French language.

The young man was very prepossessing in appearance, and I think Bruguier found him employment as clerk at some trading post up the Missouri River. Another nephew, Mr. Derome⁽⁹⁾, has been for many years a respected citizen of Woodbury County and at one time a justice of peace at Salix, I think.

Mr. Bruguier has told me that his parents desired he should be a lawyer, and with that in view gave him better opportunities for education than his fellows enjoyed, but that he was fond of hunting and adventure and tired of the dull prosy life of the country and the hard work he was called on to endure when out of school. Mr. Tredway says: "He has told me many things about his private life. He was educated in Canada and was early put into commercial life at St. John⁽¹⁰⁾ not far from his home at Joliet. He was engaged to marry a French lady there, and I have in my possession the last letter she ever wrote him. I got it from the estate of Mrs. Bruguier, which letter Bruguier had always treasured. This letter shows she was a lady of culture and refinement and a perfect lady. She speaks of their expected marriage in the fall of 1834 or 1835, I forget which. He has often told me of the occurrence, and the letter also speaks of it.

The cholera broke out in St. John⁽¹¹⁾ while Mr. Bruguier was at his home in Joliet visiting for a short time and this letter was written to him at Joliet, and told of the death of a certain friend that had caused a great commotion and quite an excitement on account of the cholera, and there were expressed great fears, and he told me that two or three days after receiving this letter he received intelligence of her death by cholera. On receipt of this sad news he immediately left that country for the Missouri valley, and it was eighteen years before he ever returned again."

To me he never spoke of this tragedy of life. An uncle had migrated to St. Louis and was connected there with the great American Fur company, which employed large numbers of men as clerks, traders, trappers and bargemen throughout the Indian country which then extended the entire length of the Missouri and across the Rocky Mountains. Most of these men were recruited in Canada and many from the Bruguier neighborhood. Probably young Bruguier was affected by the wonderful tales told of Indians, and buffalo and grizzly bears, and border fights – told by recruiting agents, or by returning veterans, much the same as boys in recent years have been by dime novels of adventure in the wild west.

At any rate, October 14, 1835, he left home and, traveling by boat and stage – there were no railroads then – via the lakes to Green Bay, Wis., thence to the Mississippi River, he reached St. Louis the last day of November, and November 19th entered the service of the fur company and started for Fort Pierre to trade with the Indians. He was doubtless an effective trader, as he soon mastered the Dakota tongue and made extensive acquaintance with the various bands of Sioux who roamed over the northwest at that time.

Why his connection with the fur company was severed is not known to me with certainty, but after two years and a half constant service Bruguier left them and set up for himself. He may have been impatient of restraint, and fonder of independent action than suited the company's managers; or he may have been ambitious of building up an independent business for himself, or as seems to me very likely there may have been a "woman in the case."

It must have been about this time that he formally assumed fellowship with the Yankton band of the Dakotas, and married according to Indian custom a daughter of the Wah-me-da-wah-kee, an Isanti chief. (I find the name of this chief written Hu-yau-e-ka, elsewhere, but in both forms the interpretation is given as War Eagle).

I do not remember hearing Bruguier speak the name of War Eagle in the Indian tongue. The two names I have given have been given to me by two Frenchmen, who knew him and probably both are translatable into War Eagle, though the Chief himself would possibly have recognized neither. The Dakota language has many dialects and synonyms.

War Eagle was of Isanti family, who lived on the Mississippi River below St. Paul. In early life he gained some notoriety as a warrior and was recognized as a chief by the Indian agent, Maj. Pitcher. He was always a friend of the whites and sought peace with them, and associated freely with them so far as he was able. About 1830 he acted for some time as a steamboat pilot on the Mississippi River. Indulgence in whiskey cost him his influence and his health and he came to live with his son-in-law, Bruguier, in whose house he died in 1851, aged about 65 years. He was buried on the point of a bluff opposite the mouth of the Big Sioux in a sitting posture with his eyes just above the surface of the ground commanding the Dakota bottom land as far north as the Vermillion plateau, some thirty miles, and looking south over Nebraska about forty miles to the

Blackbird hills. Few points present a broader, richer or lovelier landscape, or one today better occupied and cultivated.

The Treadway interview says that “for a good many years Bruguier lived entirely to himself, not associating with the Indians in their life at all, before he gave way to the wild life they pursued. He then adopted the customs of the country, and commenced mingling with the Indian race and married two of War Eagle’s daughters and raised two families of children and always cared for them to the uttermost of his ability and spent thousands and thousands of dollars on their education. After adopting the Indian life he sank into the wildest barbarism for about twelve years to the extent of wearing the Indian apparel just as a wild Indian. For the next ten years he lived with the Indians as one of them, sharing their fortunes, hunting with them, taking part in their forays and their privations, himself a member of their band. (His daughter, Mrs. Conger, says, in this period he dressed in garb of the French trappers’ buckskin coats and pants, tanned by Indians and beaded, that he never went part naked as the Indians did.)

He attained large influence with them, not merely with Isantis and Yanktons, but with all the affiliated Sioux and became in fact a trusted and honored chief, especially by reason of his superior knowledge of white men’s ways and business habits. During these years he carried on an intermittent intercourse with the whites, collecting robes and furs, which were sold to the various posts of the fur company on the Missouri or Mississippi Rivers.

Of the ten years he led this life Mr. Bruguier was never ready to talk. Like all brave men he was reticent as to his deeds and prowess. Sometimes he condescended to speak of some events of the period, and men are now living who testify to his reckless daring. He came to know his adopted people thoroughly, and by his strength and prompt action he so lived and so acted as to lead them to believe him proof against ordinary weapons. To his enemies he also seemed to bear a charmed life. They thought him endowed with presence of mind and bodily strength and activity by some supernatural power that warded him from all their weapons and enabled him always to gain victory. Two Frenchmen who knew him in those days have told me that his weapons were always in his hands and his use of them was like a thunderbolt for speed and execution. His strength was very marvelous. Once he told me of an escape from the Pawnees that so impressed the simple mind of that tribe that so far as he knew no Pawnee thereafter ever sought him with hostile intent. He was going up the Niobrara River with a covered wagon to bring down furs and robes from the stations some distance up that stream. He was alone and as he was passing along a somewhat steep hillside through a wooded trail extending far up the slope and declining below the trail into a dense thicket of brush and vines he thought he heard a deer or elk above him. So he tied his team and went carefully stalking up the hill for meat. When some distance from his wagon the Pawnees rose around him so near and in such numbers as to make resistance seem vain and escape impossible. The Pawnees thought so, at any rate, and so paused to taunt and jeer their victim before seizing him for torment and death. But Bruguier’s thoughts and acts were like the electric spark, and he sprang down the hill toward the wagon with the whooping crowd in full pursuit and arrows thick as hail in the air around him. Nearing the wagon with a desperate leap he cleared its top and landed safely in the weeds and brush below.

The Indians struck with fear and wonder at his leap did not pursue and he, with broken ribs and many bruises, made his way crawling sometimes on hands and knees over frozen ground with four inches of snow, sixteen miles to a trading post on the Dakota side of the Missouri below the Niobarar's mouth. After some days a party visited the scene of this adventure and found the wagon with its contents untouched and safe. Though the horses had disappeared.

Long after, Bruguier was told by a Pawnee that they did not touch the wagon or its contents. They were so amazed at Bruguier's leap that all belonging to him was deemed "big medicine" and he himself too dangerous to approach in hostile manner. (Bruguier's family said that he never killed any one in self defense or otherwise.)

It is said that he was the only white man that ever dared whip an Indian and stay among them afterwards. With him there was no hesitation. Insult or wrong met instant vengeance. It is related that when in the employ of the fur company he landed alone at a point on the upper Missouri to cross the country to a company camp at some distance from the great river, and soon after landing found himself among a squad of strange Indians; they thought to have a little fun with the stranger and began by prodding him here and there with sharp pointed arrows. They did not know Theophile Bruguier. He whaled away at them with the butt of his gun and laid one of the redskins on the ground at his feet, and told the others if they further molested him he would kill the whole party. His audacity had such effect that then and there they shook hands with him and declared him a Sioux warrior and ever after he was safe on prairie or in forest in all that region. There is nothing so impressive to the wild Indian as audacious courage joined to active strength. So during all those years Bruguier escaped uninjured amid the constant warfare and death around him.

The many wild adventures and strange accidents through which he passed would doubtless make an interesting book, but they have mainly gone into oblivion like the years and the customs of the people among whom he lived. Once only did he suffer serious injury. In some trouble with his neighbours, the particulars of which I do not now recall, though I know he told me, he was shot through the lungs. I think he had exposed himself unnecessarily, trusting to his reputation. (Bruguier's daughter, Mrs. Conger, says of the incident that a number of Indians were drunk in his camp and were doing a lot of shooting and in trying to quell the riot Bruguier was shot, whether purposely or by accident was not known.) I believe he instantly killed his assailant and he walked calmly to his house, near which he fell. He was lifted by his women, carried within and laid across the doorway in accordance with some Indian etiquette, and his household raised the death song. It seems that the eldest wife had dreamed of this event some days before and had narrated the particulars much to Bruguier's annoyance, and now when she raised the death song, she repeated her dream and reproached him for neglect of her warning, repeating over and again "Now he is killed – he is dead – dead!" Bruguier reviving from his swoon ordered her to stop howling, asserting with many expletives that he was not dead, that he would not die, that no Indian could kill him. In a short time he was apparently as well and strong as ever; but many years thereafter he told me he did not have the endurance he enjoyed before that wound, and that he was constantly annoyed by

a cough which sometimes gave him alarm. During these years, about ten I think of savage life, he had taken to wife according to the custom of his tribe, one after another two daughters of War Eagle, and his tepee was made cheerful with many children.

It is certain, however, that all these years he was looking forward to resume his place in civilized society; for all those children were sent away at an early age to some school at St. Louis or Detroit or elsewhere and acquired at least a common school education, and some of them made proficiency in higher branches. There were thirteen of them, all at the paternal home of whom several are believed now to be living. Two infants lie buried beside their grandfather, the great chief, and three vigorous and promising young men met with violent deaths. One, Andrew, was stabbed by a fellow student in a St. Louis college. Two were murdered in government employ as interpreters. One, Rose Ann, married first a Frenchman, Odillon Lamoreaux, and settled on the Big Sioux just over the line in Plymouth county, but is now living in this country, the wife of a respectable citizen named Dubois, to whom she had one child, a daughter. The youngest girl is the wife of Mr. Foerster, a prominent merchant in St. Louis, but now living in New York. She visited her aged step-mother and the place of her birth some years since and is a well bred, accomplished lady. She has no children. Julia married a son of Col. Northrup of Minnesota. He was wagon master in the army and was killed by the Chippewas. She afterward married a son of Mr. Conger, the agent for the Yanktons, and reared a family for him. They did live, perhaps do now, at the Yankton agency. Mary, the belle of the family, married Traversi, a son of the Traversi who reared a family of half-breeds just below this city on the road to Sergeant Bluffs and they are said to live in South Dakota west of Pierre and to be possessed of large wealth in cattle, horses and other property usual on large ranches. Victoria died when young. The eldest son, Charles, was at college when the civil war commenced and with other students enlisted and went to the front. He distinguished himself, winning a commission on the battlefield, but like many of his fellows, contracted bad habits in the service, so it was told. Joseph was killed by an Indian a little above Yankton and it is believed that Charles hunted and killed this Indian. John was a scout for Gen. Miles and an interpreter in employ of the government. He visited Sioux City after his father's death and I saw and talked with him. He appeared a fine looking, intelligent, well mannered gentleman, and I was much shocked to hear soon after that he had been shot, from ambush while hauling lumber somewhere on the upper river. Samuel and Williams, I suppose to be living somewhere on the upper Missouri, if alive at this time. Eugene married a half breed girl and when I last heard of him, was living at Standing Rock, S.D., in tribal relation with his red kindred.

(Mrs. Conger and Mrs. Bonnin, her daughter, and grand-daughter, of Bruguier, say that Charles Bruguier was killed by a white man, C.C Clifford, because of Charles Bruguier being the successful bidder over Clifford, on a mail route contract. The killing was at Rapid City, South Dakota. Clifford was arrested and put in jail, but some of his friends broke into the jail, released him, and he never was apprehended.)

Burguier's children were all intelligent and inherited largely the beauty and strength of their father.

(Dr. William R. Smith, who was one of the early physicians in Sioux City, and attended the Bruguier family, spoke as follows of this family: "It was no doubt that these noble daughters. (of War Eagle) the wives of Mr. Bruguier, maintained the proud spirit of the famous chief of the Yankton Sioux within the pale of civilization. I recall way back in the fifties the primitive but natural dignity and fine bearing of these noble and devoted daughters, wives and mothers, surrounded by a group of seemingly happy children, making, as I well knew, the bravest kind of an effort to master and practise the arts of a more exacting civilization to that of which they had been accustomed."

"They were tall and rather fine looking women and impressed one as possessing a genuineness of character which invited trust and confidence. They were especially devoted to their children."

"How well I remember some of the smaller children, who without any hesitation would talk to their father in French, to me in English and to the mothers in Sioux. These women were pioneers of their race. They were pioneers of the frontier in raising Indian corn, the distinctive lorry of our Corn Palace City.")

After ten years of this independent life we find him drawing away from his savage connections and he is again in the service of the fur company. The whole settlements are pushing westward. They have passed the Mississippi, and actually touch the Missouri at Council Bluffs. He began to yearn for a more settled life and closer intercourse with his own race. In 1849 we find him leaving the service of the fur company. He had determined to abandon his wandering life and join farming to his profitable fur trade with the Indians. Three years earlier he had selected the mouth of the Big Sioux River as a most desirable site to occupy when age or infirmity compelled a less nomadic life.

Bruguier told a curious story of his choice of location on his return to civilization. "One night," said he, "when I was at old Fort Pierre, I could not sleep and I went up on the bluff and lay down in the open and falling into a light slumber I was in deep grief for what I had become and for the place I was living in. All at once I saw spread before me a landscape of bluffs and a stream near a big river with wooded ravine and bottom land with open prairie near by. I awakened with a perfect picture in my mind, which I described to old War Eagle, who at once recognized its features as existing at the mouth of the Big Sioux which I had never seen. At this place I at once decided to make my abode." And there he settled in 1849. There stood his numerous log cabins for many years and there still stands the house he afterward built. Just below the street car bridge, after it crosses the Milwaukee railroad at the foot of the hill and reaches the bottom land.

Northwestern Iowa had been purchased from the Sioux in 1847, but no whites except French traders and employees had as yet established homes on its fertile acres. There was no government survey for some years afterwards, but he laid claim to a considerable tract of land along the Big Sioux from its mouth upward, to which he ultimately received good title. He also claimed a tract at the mouth of Perry Creek covering what is now Sioux City, south of Seventh Street, between Jones Street and Perry Creek. Here he gathered logs to build a cabin but in 1852 he sold this claim for \$100 to Joseph Lyonais, who in 1855 sold to Dr. J.K. Cook for \$3,000.00. At that time there were two log cabins

on the tract and they were the germ of the Sioux City of today. In 1857, when I came to Sioux City, I could trace Lyonais' corn field along Perry Creek, on both sides below Third Street.

(In 1858 a treaty was negotiated between the Ponca and Yankton tribes and the U.S. Government through J.B.S. Todd, C.F. Picotte and Theophile Bruguier, commissioners, whereby the Indians surrendered about 16,000,000 acres in Southeastern Dakota, watered by Sioux, Vermillion, James, Neobrara and Missouri Rivers for \$2,000,000 or 12 ½ cents an acre. This opened up South Dakota to white settlement.)

At this time, then in May 1849, Bruguier established himself as a farmer-ranchman and trader at the mouth of the Big Sioux where I found him on that pleasant day in May in 1857. Before this he had relinquished all authority in his tribe and had bestowed his wife's youngest sister upon his former friend, Henry Ayote, who had come from Canada with him and been his companion all these years.

There was a large log house near where now stands the frame house which he afterwards built, standing not far from the building of the Riverside railway trestle over the Chicago and Milwaukee railroad. Standing northward at short distance apart were half a dozen smaller cabins or stables. Around was a crowd of Indians and half-breeds, many of them busy cooking. They had killed one or more beeves and were boiling the meat in large kettles hung on poles over fires of logs and brush. Here and there were some drawing meat from the kettles, eating it tearing it with fingers and teeth. Others laid large chunks on boards or logs and cut it with knives. A few had tin plates and old style two-pronged forks and knives of iron. I saw no other food than meat. I learned that this scene continued from morn till night and from day to day as long as the supply held out. By Indian custom the food acquired by one is free to all his family, and his family includes every member of his "gens," in fact all who had right to his surname, even if perfect strangers. So every member of Bruguier's "gens" was free to kill and eat Bruguier's herd. This, of course, would not be a profitable depletion of the herd under ordinary circumstances, but there were compensations. These Indians, in consideration of lands sold to the government were receiving quarterly annuities in cash. Now Mr. Bruguier constantly forbade the Indians to slaughter his cattle, and they as regularly killed and ate them, and just as regularly on quarter day he appeared before the paying agent and made complaint that they had taken a certain number of his cattle, without leave, and presenting a bill for a good round sum demanded that he should be paid out of the general allowance. This was the best market possible. He always got his money, though the bill was generally more or less discounted as being somewhat exorbitant. Moreover, the agent "had to be seen" (I believe that is the proper slang.) However, the bill was made out with full expectations of these drawbacks. I recollect on one such pay day meeting him raging furiously – venting his wrath upon the agent – perhaps a new man, interlarding abuse of the agent with expletive curses on his own stupidity. On inquiry I learned that his bill of \$16,000.00 had been cut down to \$10,000, or thereabouts, which left him after expense was paid – that is discount and "seeing the agent" only about \$8,000 in all. He was cursing his own stupidity in not making a bill for \$20,000, as he in that case would probably, after discounts, have received \$12,000, which he stoutly maintained would

have been only a fair compensation. I would not vouch for the exactness of the numbers above given, only for the general character of the transaction. If Solomon had lived in that day on the Indian frontier, I think he might have enumerated among the mysteries not understanding the relations between Indian agencies and white contractors and ranchman in the settlement for depredations and for losses of supplies through no fault of the contractor.

Here in May 1857, one of Bruguier's wives died and the other in 1859, and they are both buried by their father's side and the children on the point of bluff near the mouth of the Big Sioux. As the mouth of the Big Sioux changes location from year to year I would say that the graves of War Eagle and family are on the first high bluff toward the city from the debauchment of the ravine down which lies the trolley line to Riverside park.

(Louis D. Letellier, in writing up his Journal, gave an account of his experience with Bruguier in a trading expedition which gives some idea of his experiences as a trader after he had settled at the mouth of the Sioux.)

In March, 1860, Burguier outfitted at Sioux City, a trading expedition to the Indians around Fort Pierre. He hired six men. Hamilton, an old trader, was placed in charge. The others were Cox, Sheldon, Joseph Leonnais, and Louis D. Letellier, the last two Frenchmen, former traders, four wagons with three yoke of oxen each, loaded with merchandise, sugar, coffee, bacon, flour, corn and other things.

The men and teams started several days before Bruguier did. The weather was cold and there was snow on the ground. They got up the Missouri River as far as Chapel River. Here they built a log house for their first trading stop. While they were building this, travelers from above passed their camp every day and reported that the Indians above were making trouble.

Hamilton became frightened and ordered the outfit to start back to Sioux City. This was done over Letellier's protest, who was for going on to Fort Pierre. After starting back, they unloaded thirty bushels of corn on the prairie. The first day's drive back became a stampede. Hamilton was frightened by report of two Indians who passed them. Hamilton left them at Pratt Creek, where his Indian wife lived and ordered them to go on to Sioux City. After a day's further march they met Bruguier coming up, and on hearing what had been done, he was furious with rage at Hamilton and at the others for consenting to the return.

Here follows Letellier's account of the rest of the expedition in his own phonetic French English spelling:

"The orders of Brouguiere were to turn back and reach Fort Pierre without stopping. The oxens were very tired. The roads soft, every small stream bank full, there was a hard road to travel before us.

After fording seven streams we arrived at the Cotes qui tremp a L'eau, that is two miles below and on the opposite side of the river from Fort Pierre. Jos. Lionnais, Fox, Sheldon and myself went up opposite the fort to obtain from Mr. Primeau the flat boat belonging to the Fort. Our shouts and signs received no answer from the white people of the Fort, that gate was closed, the fort surrounded by Indians, parties of Red Skins on horse back were running over the prairie in all directions. The appearance was that something strange and serious had happened to them. We returned to the camp and next morning early we was again opposite the Fort. Indians had possession of the boats, already loaded and started across the river. They landed where we stood. After unloading we jumped aboard and crossed. I went in the Fort and informed Mr. Primeau of Mr. Brouguere being on the other side of the river, opposite the Island, with wagons loaded with goods, that he wished to obtain his flat boat to cross the river. Mr. Primeau answered that the Indians had the boats to cross themselves, it was impossible to get it before they are all crossed over, and it would take two or three days' time. Go back to Brouguere, he said, and tell him he is in a bad position, in danger to be robbed and maltreated, to be very liberal with the chiefs, not to spare his goods, in fact that his life was in danger, that the Yanctonnais Indian had killed the Chief Plat Cot D'Ours (Bears Rib) for having listened to the white men's counsel in their treaty with the government. Don't delay, for in a short time Indians will be at your camp. Well said I to our party, let us go to Brouguere. I will stay here until the Indians has got through crossing, said Jos. Lionnais. Cox and Sheldon gave me the same answer. They felt that they were in security inside of the Fort, but a least it was a cowardly act on their part. I could not plead with them. I started on the run and jumped aboard of a boat they were shoving off from the shore, heavy loaded with squaws, children, young bucks, dogs and all their equipage, many squaws crying, some motioning to me to get out, applying the words mean and villain white man, the dogs growling, pointing their sharp nose at me. My situation was not a pleasant one. The Indian acting as pilot called me on the high bench to give me the job of steering the boat, that relieved me from the hateful position I was in. I steered the boat to the shore, and jumped out on the bank. That did not suit the company, at first I was one too many in the boat, now they wanted to keep me in. I could not understand and started for Brouguere's camp. I soon reached him and informed him of what Mr. Primeau had told me. Brouguere understood very well that our position was not an enviable one. When the Indians went that far to kill their Chief on account of a treaty with the white people's government. In the excited state that they were at the present time, two white men on their land, with a stock of merchandise, stood a poor chance to come out whole. Brouguere was not afraid of them. He had met and fought them before, when he was not laded with a stock of goods, but now it was different. He was enraged against our three men who were deserting us at this critical time to hide themselves in the Fort, and let us two men stand before the Indians and take care of the outfit. He did not measure nor choose his words in denouncing them. Our cattle were already out of sight. We deliberated about what to do and how to satisfy those Yanctonnais. We would stand firm before them. He, Broughiere was going to be polite with them. But we must not show any fear, that would be to our advantage. Suddenly we hear the tramp of horses by our tent. It was a party of Yanctonnais Bucks, the leader of the gang was an infernal one-eyed dog looking faced man. He was the speaker of the party. There was no salutation as usual, but his first words was. You white men how dare you to travel over the Yancton

country, have our green grass eaten by your cattles, you cut our dry wood to cook the meat of our Buffalo that you kill, you scare away the game that sustain the Indians life. You do all this without offering any payment to us. You are very small in the prairie, we hold life in our hands. Speak, let me hear you. Then he turned himself toward his associates. They in accord said How. Brouguere answered to them that he felt at home when he was on the Yanctons land, for he was allied to them. His wife was a woman of their nation. He entertained friendship for them, for that reason as a true friend he had brought up a stock of goods to exchange with them for their Buffalo robes, that it would be to their benefit to trade with him. The Bucks were listening with countenance cast down. Not one answered back. After having given them a feast, consisting of meat, biscuit, coffee and honey, Brouguere distributed a present of shot, tobacco and a breech cloth to each one. They did not appear satisfied, for they retired without thanking and started for their camp.

It was near night. Brouguere was gone half a mile from our Camp to look about for our cattle. I was fixing the inside of the tent, in order to prepare supper. I heard a noise outside. Coming out I saw four naked Indians on horse back with their guns. One of them had already my carpet bag, in which were my best clothes. In a second I snatched it off his hands. Another had an armful of clothes and had retired a distance. The others were searching among the goods in the wagons. The Buck from whom I had taken away my carpet bag had an ugly looking countenance, another standing near made a motion to me to return the bag to the Buck, pointing to his gun, meaning that his gun would compel me. I paid no attention to his motions. Brouguere who from a good distance saw what was going on at camp, was returning as fast as he could, he had a very sore foot, it was hard for him to go fast. When up to the wagons, he asked them. What are your reasons to come and rob a man, who have received and treated you so well a few minutes ago. One of them answered. We have come here to trade, but your white dog (pointing his finger at me) don't want to. One of the party had a Buffalo Robe on the back of his horse, he took it and threwed it at Broughuere's feet, saying in an angry tone. Give me flour for this robe. Brouguere gave him about seventy-five pound with sum other things, about the price of five robes in a fair trade. That was to satisfy him. They went away saying that they would return in the morning and drive us away down stream and keep our goods, that every thing we had belonged to them, their Chief said so. We did not believe in their menaces, but it kept us awake a part of the night, for fear that something wrong would happen. We made two bundles of our clothes, that I carried a good distance down and hide them in the thick willows by the river. We would not light a fire on account of the Riz Indians who travel down stream in early summer and they are a treacherous people. We feared to be discovered, both of us without supper gun in hand tried to have a moment of rest. Next morning at day break before we had eaten a bit. A party of about thirty bucks were disturbing us with their presence, each of them received a present from Brouguere, which made them thirst for more. While half of the party was on top of the wagons, diging in the loads, dragging sides of bacon a distance in the grass, a couple of them had found our bundles of clothes, and had hold of them. I was lucky enough to be able to run up to them and take possession of them before they were going away. In this manner I was kept busy picking up our meats and other goods that they dragged in all directions, at about noon time the thieving Bauvais had our twelve yoke of oxen divided

among themselves, and were awaiting the arrival of their chief to execute there menaces made the day previous. All at once there is murmuring amount these red painted scoundrels. It was the appearance of their chiefs followed by a large party, nearing our camp. The rabble was fighting among themselves, in taking the stuff from the wagons, it was to who would have the most of it, but this trouble did not last a long time. The three chiefs entered in the tent and seated down. Brouguere promptly asked the first Chief, Big Head, if he had send his men to rob him of his goods that he had through hardships brought up here to trade with them. No said Big Head and he called his brother to go out and see that the Bucks cease to disturb our goods. In a few minutes there was not an Indian to be seen near the wagons. I felt relieved to see that probably we will not suffer what had been predicted to us by these red rascals. At the same time, Jos. Lionnais, Cox, Sheldon arrived with the flat boat. Louis St. Onge and Jos. Shodie of Sioux Point arrived also with their wagons from below. Now we numbered seven men to help one another defend ourselves, if necessary, although with poor success against over one hundred fighting men. I did not entertain the idea that any of us would be killed, but I was well aware that having the advantage over us they would follow it to the end, if not checked by an unforeseen act on their part. The four fifths of the bravest among them were low cowards, will not fight, but will murder an enemy, defencless womans, childrens, his heart is not of the right collar to entertain love or friendship even for his aged Father or Mother. How can we expect fair play from him when we are in is power. After the Chiefs harrangues, Brouguere, distributed to them about the amount of four hundred dollars worth of merchandise, thinking that it would satisfy them. He was deceived. A brave solemnly raised up his noble carcasse, and pointing his hand toward the thieving rascals. Look out said he, the number of heads, how much of them will have out of what you have given us. I could see and read Brouguere. He was boiling hot. But without saying a word he gave them a few things more among which he presented to Big Head a splendid double barrel shot gun. Here is my little boys shot gun. It is a present from him to you. After handling and looking over the gun a while Big Head spread his hand over his breast saying, Camarade my heart is satisfied. Well said Brugurere, if your heart is content, it is my turn to ask a favor from you. What is it, said Big Head. It is that you let me have four of your soldier to guard me against your young men who are still disturbing and robbing my goods and this guard to stay with me until we are across on the Island. You will have them said the Chief. He called an Indian in the tent to receive his orders. It was a tall and big mean looking man, the feature of a panther looking at us with disdain. The chief told him to take four Indian with him and to send every one to their camp to guard the white trader, that no harm happen to him until he is across the river. This soldier answered nothing, his face twisted an appearance that the orders was against the wishes of his heart. I don't want this man, said Brouguere. Give me your brother he is a brave who will execute whatever you command him to do. Big Head called in his brother a tall well proportioned man, with a smiling countenance who received the Chiefs order with a How, leaving his blanket in the tent, he came out with his gun, struck me a friendly tap on the shoulder, saying White man fear not, I am here. He cried out to the crowd to leave for the camp, nearly all started off fast. Eight men who had refused a share in the present that Brouguere had given out, who wanted all or nothing made no motion to move off. The soldier ordered them again to move off discharging his gun over their heads. No answer. They stood like statues. The soldier loaded his gun, and

cried out to them. This time it will open your ears if you don't move off at once for the camp. The party started off slowly and kept going until out of sight. We crossed everything we had on the island. Our last load was two yoke of oxen in the boat and we started the others following the boat by swimming. They followed till half way then turned back. The night was very dark, our Indian soldier gone to their Camp, we were all tired and hungry. Brouguere decide to stay with his oxen all night. I had the bad luck to be chosen to stay with him while the remainder of our party would go on the Iland, eat and sleep, the two necessities to live and enjoy good healt, what I was in need of at that moment. I could not refuse to stay with him. He had suffered his part with me and no doubt his bravery and knowledge of Indian manners, saved our lives, both well armed stayed by and kept the cattles together. What we expected to meet in the morning was the eight bull headed Indians that caused trouble to the soldier, but next day was a happy one for us, by noon our cattle were all across and we was camped on the small Iland near Fort Pierre. Two days of rest made us feel all right. The third day Indians on both side of the river wanted us, with goods to trade. We visited one side and brought back one hundred robes on the fourth day we was camped at Fort Pierre. Mr. Primeau offered us to camp inside the Fort, but Brouguere declined. In the morning we heard an alarm given by the squaws. They cried very loud. Padanie, Padanie. It was a war party of Riz, who had appeared on a sudden near the Fort, and were surrounding a drove of horses belonging to the hunters. The half Breeds and Indians they all together started after the war party, which decamped with but one horse belonging to Halsey of the Sioux Point. In a few days we had traded all our goods. We left Fort Pierre for Sioux City in a Mackinaw boat, furnished by Mr. Primeau. Bad rumors had circulated and reached the ears of our familys. Indian travelers had brought down news that the Brouguere party was in danger of being annihilated by the Yanctonais, another rumor was that Brouguere and Letillier had been killed, other new contradictory, so they were awaiting with anxiety our returns.)

Brouguere took little interest in public affairs, though he cast one of the votes at the first election in Woodbury County, August 1, 1853, and at the election in 1855 he was chosen clerk of the court. It seems, however, that he never served, as he was removed next term for neglect of duty. He cared nothing for office and professed to care and know little of politics. So, having been associated with and dealing altogether with people whose sympathies were with the south, when the civil war began he was outspoken in opposition to the republican party. I remember a talk with him, in which he expressed himself with more force than elegance as to President Lincoln and all his supporters. His oldest son, Charles, was in college, I think at Ann Arbor, Mich. Bruguier had just learned that Charles had left college and enlisted in a regiment of Indians raised in Michigan, and had gone to the front to fight for his country. Later I met him in a pleasanter mood. News had come that in battle fought Charles had shown great bravery, and had been made a sergeant on the field by the commanding officer. Later still I found him not only a strong supporter of the war, but quite reconciled to his son. Charles had distinguished himself – had been mentioned in the orders of the day and had been commissioned, I think, as captain or perhaps, only lieutenant of his company.

As the country settled up and the Indians retreated up the river Mr. Bruguier became more and more the genial country gentleman, to some of you, doubtless as well know as he was to me. He was always free handed, and had many claimants to his bounty, so that I fear he was sometimes pressed for ready money, but his home property on the Big Sioux grew rapidly in value as Sioux City grew, and he had large holdings of the choicest Lands in Plymouth and Woodbury counties which had been acquired somehow in connection with services rendered in the negotiations through which the Yanctons Sioux ceded South Dakota to the United States. By the Isanti treaty he received 480 acres of land and when the Yanctons, in 1859 ceded southeastern South Dakota, he received \$3,000. For himself, and each of his then living twelve children got the same sum and moreover 320 acres of land which was selected from the best lands available. All this \$39,000, Mr. Tredway thinks was spent in the fruitless attempt to educate his children into the habits and feelings of civilized whites – an attempt fairly successful in the cases of Mrs. Dubois and Mrs. Foerster, but only partially and indifferently with the other children. Much of the land went into the hands of unprincipled whites. After the war he became a partner in a company that was trading with the Indians on the upper Missouri. He was not too old and too much shackled with home interests to give the business thorough personal attention. New men had come into power, new methods into vogue, and himself the victim of unprincipled men. I remember he came to me in those days desiring to sell the 700 acres where he had built him a fine house for the time, and which he had hoped to occupy till death. He was much affected.

He said that with \$7,000 he could pay all he owed and be clear to begin life anew; and for that sum he soliated me to become a purchaser of the entire home property. It was one of the many neglected opportunities for the acquisition of wealth that have come to me as to most men in active business life. The property covered the present fair grounds, the Riverside park and eastward a considerable distance over the upland; and is today of twenty times the value he had set upon it. He proposed to retire to a tract of fine land he owned near Sandhill Lake, Salix, and devote himself to exclusive farming; and with sudden accession of courage he affirmed he would yet be the richest man in Woodbury county. Some time later he sold, doubtless for a large sum, and moved to the tract of which he had spoken to me, but it was too late in life to carry out his expressed purpose in its entirety.

He had married in 1862 a most estimable lady, Mrs. Victoria Brunette, whose life for many years had been spent at various trading posts from the Missouri river to Salt Lake, and had been full of experience and as romantic and perhaps more tragic than his own. And so in his declining years, his many children grown up, and living settled away from the paternal roof, he began a new career, with a wife in full sympathy with himself, and a true help-mate; and with undaunted energy opened up a large farm on unbroken prairie. Had he been somewhat younger he might have attained the wealth he had hoped. It was too late, but I believe he lived in comfort and peace until his departure February 18, 1895. I think all who knew him were his friends, and sincerely regretted his death. It seemed premature to me, despite his more than fourscore years, he had been so full of life and vigorous activity, and so eager with hopeful plans when I last saw him.

It was a strangely eventful life he led, a life of danger, or privation and romantic incident. Much of his conduct will not bear criticism, if judged by our standard of ethics of today, but let us remember that the very acts we condemn gave him his power over the savages, among whom he lived, and that power was always used for peace. He was kind to his family and friends, ever watchful for the good of those around him and nobly free in his intercourse. No one ever questioned his uprightness in all relations with his neighbors.

Mr. Tredway calls attention to his character, in that being well educated and of good moral habits, after suffering the loss of his sweetheart, he sank into such a savage life for years, but ultimately came back to the old religious faith of his youth and died a most devoted and beloved Christian in the Catholic Church⁽¹²⁾.

Children and descendants of Théophile Bruguère

1. Baptiste died young; buried at Fort Vermillion.
2. Andrew was fatally stabbed by a schoolmate while attending school at St. Louis before 1860. Recent information indicates that the boy who inflicted the fatal wound was a planter's son from Arkansas, who later migrated with his father to Minnesota and was one of the captors of the Youngers brothers, after the famous Northfield Bank Robbery.
3. Charles was educated at Ann Arbor, Michigan. Was an officer in the Civil War, promoted for bravery. He was killed at Rapid City, South Dakota, by a competitor in a mail contract bid, who escaped. He left a son, Charles Bruguier, who is now an Episcopal minister, as missionary among the Indians.
4. Rose. She first married Oddillon Lamoureux, an early French settler in Sioux City, he soon died and she married Victor Dubois, and lived at Salix many years. She has a son, Gene Dubois, now living there. Victor Dubois died several years ago and Mrs. Dubois lives in California with her daughter.
5. Julia was born at Fort Vermillion, November 15, 1844. She was the daughter of the wife Dawn. She was married in 1865 at Sioux City, Iowa, to George Northrup. After his death, she married Cassius Conger, son of Major Conger, former Indian agent. She has had several children. She is now living with her husband at Dante, South Dakota. She visited Sioux City twice in 1922 and was present at the dedication of the War Eagle monument. She had with her, her daughter, Mrs. Merey Bonnin, with a grandson, and great-grandson. Mrs. Bonnin is now Clerk of the Courts at Wagner, S.D.
6. Mary married a son of Agust Traversier, an old fur trader and settler, south of the Floyd monument. She moved to South Dakota and has many descendants there.
7. Victoria. She died young while at St. Louis, and is buried there.
8. Selena was the best educated of all the girls. She married Foster (Foerster) a successful business-man, lived at St. Louis and New York. After her husband's death she married Hardy and is still living. She was a most accomplished lady and visited her father several times in his old age.
9. Joseph was educated in St. Louis and went up among the Indians and was killed by them between Yankton and Choteau Creek.
10. Eugent married and living at Standing Rock, South Dakota.

11. John was a scout for General Miles and was killed at Poplar Creek on the upper Missouri.
12. Samuel. He is yet living at McLaughlin, S.D. He was for many years in the employ of the United States as scout and interpreter and was much trusted by army officers.
13. William, now dead. He was a missionary among the Crow Indians.

It is somewhat remarkable that four of Bruguiier's sons met violent deaths, to-wit: Andrew, Charles, Joseph and John. Five are still living, Julia, Rose, Selena, Eugene and Samuel. Of the thirteen children, seven were by the first wife, Blazing, to-wit: Baptiste, Andrew, Rose, Mary, Selena, Charles and Eugent. There were six children by the second wife, Dawn: Julia, Victoria, Joseph, John, William, and Samuel.

- (1). See page 97, No. 18.
- (2). The name of Bruguière was often spelled Bruyère, especially since about 1825.
- (3). See the note at the bottom of page 87.
- (4). For "L'Assomption."
- (5). It is Médard Bruguière."
- (6). For "Kipp."
- (7). Louis Léon Lesieur-Désaulniers was in effect a member of the assembly as well as the executive but he was only a distant relative of Laurent Lesieur-Désaulniers married to Rosianne Bruguière, sister of Theophile Bruguière.
- (8). This is not correct.
- (9). This is Gustave Derome, page 113.
- (10). Is it not a question rather of St. Paul de Lavaltrie.
- (11). Is it not a question rather of St. Paul de Lavaltrie.
- (12). One story, on the subject of Théophile Bruguière, is that a priest from Iowa, in search of money to repair the pews of his church, came to find him one day to solicit a donation to aid in this cause. "How much do you need to repair the pews?" asked Bruguière, who addressed the whole world familiarly when he spoke French. "Four hundred dollars," said the priest. Bruguière took the sum from his pocket and gave it to him.

Chapter X

List of Appendices

I – Evidence given at the inquest of the Court of Sessions of the Peace of New York, in order to accuse Benjamin Kipp.

II – Act of indictment against Benjamin Kipp.

III – Judgment confiscating the property of Benjamin Kipp.

IV – Claim of Samuel Kipp.

V – Declaration of Samuel Kipp attesting that it was impossible to deposit his claim in the time first allotted.

VI – Deposition of Samuel Kipp before the Commissioner Pemberton, in support of his claim.

VII – Declaration of Oliver Smith and his wife on the subject of the marriage of Samuel Kipp and Mary Knapp.

VIII – Memorial of Mary Knapp soliciting a pension as a widow of an officer.

IX – Deposition of Moses Knapp, before the Commissioner Pemberton, in support of his claim.

X – Testimony of Moses Knapp.

XI – Deposition of Isaac Hatfield.

XII – Letter from James Kipp to Professor Henry.

XIII – Act of marriage of Médard Bruguière to Elizabeth Kipp.

Chaper X

Documentation

Appendix I

Evidence given at the inquest of the Court of Sessions of the Peace of New York, at Upper Salem, May 23, 1781 in order to accuse Benjamin Kipp of having adhered to the enemies of the state.

“Westchester County, ss: The examination of Elijah Hunter taken before the Grand Jury at a Court of General Sessions of the Peace held in and for the County of Westchester. The Examinant being duly Sworn deposeth and saith that Benjamin Kipp Esquire of North Castle in the County of Westchester lived on his farm in North Castle aforesaid with his family in May in the year of our Lord one Thousand Seven Hundred and Seventy Eight being a place not in the power and possession of the fleets and armies of the King of Great Britain and that this Deponent Saw the said Benjamin Kipp Esquire at New York, a place in the power and possession of the fleets and armies of the King of Great Britain, on or about the first day of July in the year of our Lord one Thousand and Seven Hundred and Seventy Nine and further the Deponent saith not.

(Signed) Elijah Hunter

Sworn this 23 day of
May 1781 before me
Signed Nath Delivan, Foreman

(Archives of the County Clerk of New York County, New York, N.Y., U.S.A.)

Appendix II

Act of Indictment of Benjamin Kipp

The People Vs Benjamin Kipp Esq. Indictment

“A true Bill taken in pursuance of the Act of the Legislature of this State entitled . ‘An Act for the forfeiture and sale of the Estates of person who have adhered to the Enemies of this State and for declaring the sovereignty of the People of this State in respect to all property within the same.’ “

Signed Nath Delivan, Foreman

Preferred into Court the 24th of May 1781.
Signed Richard Hatfield, Clerk

Entered in the Minutes of the Supreme Court on the 31st day of July 1781.

Judgment entered 26th October 1782.

Westchester County ss: At a Court of general Sessions of the Peace of the People of the State of New York held at the Meeting House in Upper Salem in and for the County of Westchester on Tuesday the Twenty Second Day of May in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and eighty one before Gilbert Drake Thaddeus Crane Ebenezer Purdy and Abraham Leggett Esqrs Justices of the said people for the County of Westchester the peace of the said people in the County Aforesaid to keep and also Divers felonies Trespasses and other Misdemeanors in the said county perpetrated to hear try and determine assigned by the Oaths of Nathaniel Delavan Samuel Lawrence Jesse Treusdale Daniel Bouton Ebenezer Slasor John Coley Peter Benedict Junr Isaac Keefer Aaron Furman Benjamin Chapman Uriah Wallace James Kronkhyte Halsey Wood James Reynolds James Brown John Hyatt and Joseph Osborn good and Lawful men of the said County who being then and there sworn and charged to enquire for the said people and the Body of Westchester County upon their Oaths present that Benjamin Kipp Esquire now or late of North Castle in the County of Westchester did with force and arms Etc. on or about the first day of July in the year of our Lord one thousand Seven Hundred and Seventy Nine at Upper Salem in the County of Westchester Adhere to the Enemies of this State against the peace of the said people of the State of New York and their Dignity.

I, Richard Hatfield Clerk of the Court of General Sessions of the Peace in and for the County of Westchester do return to the people of the State of New York in the Supreme Court of Judicature for the said State the Schedules hereunto annexed being an indictment taken in pursuance of the Act of Legislature of the said State Entitled ‘An Act for the forfeiture and sale of the Estates of person who have adhered to the Enemies of this State and for declaring the sovereignty of the people of this State in respect to all property within the same’ at a Court of General Sessions of the Peace held in and for the said County and the Examination or Deposition of the Witness upon whose Testimony this said Indictment was found IN TESTIMONY whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this fourth day of June in the fifth year of the Independence of the said State.”

Signed Richard Hatfield, Clerk

(Archives of the County Clerk of New York County, New York, N.Y., U.S.A.)

Appendix III

Judgement of the Supreme Court of the State of New York, dated the 15th of July 1783, confiscating the property of Benjamin Kipp:

“The People of the State of New York by the Grace of God free and independent to all whom these presents shall come Greeting. Know Ye that we have inspected the Pleas of our Supreme Court of Judicature do find a certain Record there remaining in the words

following, to wit, New York Supreme Court fs of the Term of October in the seventh Year of the Independence of this State. Be it remembered, that on the twenty fourth Day of May in the Fifth Year of the Independence of the State of New York, the Jurors of the People of this State, for the Body of the County of West Chester did upon their Oath present that Benjamin Kip Esquire now or late of North Castle in the County of West Chester did with force and Arms &c on or about the first day of July in the year of our Lord one thousand and seven hundred and seventy nine at Upper Salem in the County of West Chester adhere to the Enemies of this State, against the Peace of the said People of the State of New York and their Dignity. And the said Benjamin Kip having according to the Form of the Act of the Legislature entitled, 'An Act for the Forfeiture and Sale of the Estates of Person who have adhered to the Enemies of this State, and for declaring the Sovereignty of the People of this State in respect to all Property within the same,' been notified to appear and traverse the said Indictment, and not having appeared and traversed within the Time, and in the Manner, in and by the said Act limited and required; It is therefore considered, that the said Benjamin Kip do forfeit all and singular the Estate, both real and personal, whether in Possession, Reversion or Remainder, held or claimed by him within this State, to the People of this State. Judgment signed this fifteenth Day of July MDCCLXXXIII [1783] Robert Yates. All which we have caused by the Presents to be exemplified and the Seal of our Court to be hereunto affixed Witness Richard Morris Esquire Chief Justice of our said State of New York the sixth Day of May in the Tenth Year of our Independence.
Signed M. Kesson

(Public Record Office, London, England, Audit Office, American Loyalist Claims, A.O. 13/14/263.

Appendix IV

Claim of Samuel Kipp

To Colonel Thomas Dundas Jeremiah Pemberton Esq., Commissr appointed by Act of Parliament to enquire into the losses & services of the American Loyalists.

The Memorial of Captain Samuel Kipp Most humbly showeth.

That your Memorialist is a native of West Chester in the late province of New York and that he on all occasion during the late dissention in America manifested his Loyalty to his Majesty and his attachment to the British Government.

That he joined the British Troops soon after they landed on Long Island with Colonel Rogers. He afterwards joined the Corps of West Chester Loyalists and served with them as a Volunteer until November 1779 when His Excellency Governor Tryon was pleased to honor him with a Commission as a Lieut. in a Troop of Horse, that in 1780 he succeeded to command of the said Troop and had charge of the same during the whole war. That the services rendered by this Corps of Loyalists are so well know as hardly to

require recapitulation here – suffice therefore to say – that they occupied the Post in the front of the Lines of the British Army during the whole war, without pay or any other reward than a consciousness of doing their duty as faithful subjects. That by means of their exertions in that situation the important Post of Kings Bridge was kept free from the insults of the enemy and the communication with the country so perfectly open as to enable the Inhabitants to supply the magazines with a great proportion of provisions and forage. That they made frequent and successful excursion into the Enemy’s Lines. That in the course of the war they captured so many prisoners as enabled them not only to exchange their own men but to furnish upwards of 500 for the release of the Royal Army and at the close of the war they had the paroles of above 200 prisoners more.

That for their exertions & spirited conduct agst the enemy they at different times recd the thanks of the commanders in chief and also of the General Officers commanding at the Post of Kings Bridge.

That at the close of the war the Corps emigrated to Nova Scotia and became settlers in the wilderness of Cumberland County. That no provision whatever has been made for the subsistence of the Officers of the sd Corps, by half pay or otherwise and that now all their hopes and expectations for an allowance for their sd services rests entirely with you through whom they flatter themselves they shall be able to receive such marks of the Royal and National Bounty as will enable them to cultivate their new lands and with industry to maintain themselves & family with a degree of comfort and decency. That he has been attainted by the Laws of the State of New York for his adherence to the Royal Cause & his property in that county is thereby entirely lost. He therefore prays that you will take his case into consideration in order that under your report he may be enabled to receive such aid & relief as his losses & services may be found to deserve.

Signed Samuel Kipp
Halifax, March 15th 1786.

Capt Samuel Kipps losses sustained during the late disturbances in America, viz.

	Curry
¼ part of a farm late the property of his decd father Benjamin Kipp valued at 2000. at 8/- the dollar	£500. 0.-
Lost two horses & Colt on coming into the British lines	£ 70. 0.-
One Horse killed in action	£ 44.16.-
1 Horse taken in the service	£ 40. 0.-
1 Horse & 1 Cow taken by French Army	£ 33. 0.-
1 Horse dyed in the service	£ 20. 0.-
Household furniture	£ 20. 0.-
2 Horses left behind him	£ 47. 0.-
1 Negro deserted to the Enemy	£ 50. 0.-
	£824.16.-
Equal to Sterling	£463.19.-

Appendix V

Declaration of Samuel Kipp attesting that it was impossible to deposit his claim in the time first allotted.

Captain Samuel Kipp late of West Chester County in the late province of N. York but now of Cumberland in Nova Scotia maketh Oath and saith, That he resided at New York in part and in part in Nova Scotia from 15th of July, 1783, to the 25th of March, 1784; and this Deponent further saith, That he was utterly incapable of preferring or delivering to the Commissioners appointed by Act of Parliament, passed in the 23rd Year of the Reign of his present Majesty, entitled, 'An Act for appointing Commissioners, to enquire into the Losses and Services of all such Person who have suffered in their Rights, Properties, and Professions, during the late unhappy Dissentions in America, in Consequence of their Loyalty to his Majesty, and Attachment to the British Government:' or at their Office, any Memorial, Claim, or Request, for Aid or Relief, on Account of this Deponent's Losses, during the late unhappy Dissentions in America, within the Time allowed by the said Act, for receiving such Claims; by Reason that this Deponent, during all such Time, viz. between the 15th of July 1783, and the 25th of March, 1784, lived or resided at New York until he sailed for Cumberland County in Nova Scotia where he arrived in October 1783 & has continued there ever since. That soon after his arrival, he made out his Claim & forwarded it to England with Major Brace to be delivered to Colonel DeLancey to be by him put under the late Act of Parliament But this Deponent is informed & believes that by the neglect of Major Brace or some other means it was not recd by Colonel Delancey untill the time limitted for receiving Claims by the sd Act was expired which circumstance prevented its being put in under the former Act of Parlement. And further the Deponent saith not.

Signed Samuel Kipp

Sworn before the Commrs of American claims at Halifax, the 16 March 1786.

Signed P. Hunter Sec.

Audit Office, American Loyalist Claims, A.O. 13/14/263, fo. 341, Public Record Office, London, England.)

Appendix VI

Depositions of Samuel Kipp and his witnesses, his brother Thomas Kipp and James Dickens, before the Commissioner Pemberton, at St. John, New Brunswick, the 30 October 1786, in support of his claim.

Deposition of Samuel Kipp

No. 623

St. Johns, October 30th 1786.

Evidence in the Proceedings of the Loyalists Commissioners, before Commissioner Jeremy Pemberton.

Case of Saml. Kipp, late of New York.
Claimant Sworn Saith:

He left New York in 1783 on 1st June, and came to Nova Scotia, & settled on his first coming at Cumberland. In consequence of having heard of a letter from Col. Delancey to Captn. Knapp, he drew up his claim & swore to it before James Law, 9th Nov., and gave it Gilbert Totten, Agent to Col. Delancey's Regiment, who was to give it to Major Brace, who was going to England as a Claimt. Understood & was to deliver it there to Col. Delancey. This was about the month of Novr. Major Brace went to Halifax. Thinks the Claim was forwarded to him there. He went to England, but the claim came too late to Col. Delancey's Hands to be delivered in time.

Produces Letter from Col. Delancey in which he admits he recd the Claim, with many others, in No. 133, in July 1784, with a copy of a note from Major Brace to Col. Delancey, dated 12 July, 1784, in which he informs him that he sends him a Packet just recd, from Halifax, which he supposes should have been delivered before he left the country.

Claimt, says he is a native of America; resided at North Castle in the New York Prov. when the troubles began. Never signed any Association with the Rebels or served in their Militia. Joined the Brit. Just after the Battle of Long Island. Joined Col. Rogers and served under him as Volunteer in the Queen's Rangers that Campaign. The next summer served under Col. Delancey in Regt. of West Chester Loyalists. In 1779 had a Commission as Lieut. of Capt. Knapp's Troop of Refugee & Militia Light Horse.

Produces Commission from Govr. Tryon, dated 19 Nov 1779. In 1780 had a Command of a Troop under Col. Delancey. Continued to serve under him during the War. Came in the summer of 1783 to Nova Scotia & is now settled.

Produces Certificate signed Marguard, aid de Camp to Genl. Losberg to Loyalty & to spirited services of Claimt.

Was entitled to $\frac{1}{4}$ of a farm at North Castle in West Chester Co., left by his Father's Will. Produces Will of Benj. Kipp, his father, dated 3 Aug. 1780, whereby he gives the remainder of his Estate after a few Legacies to his four sons, Willm., James, Saml. , & Thomas. Testator died soon after making his Will at Morrisina. His Father had been banished from his Estate on acct. of his Loyalty & persecuted by Act of the State.

He joined the British & lived within the lines till time of his Death. He acted occasionally as a Magistrate. He had before had a Commission as Magistrate. He was too old to bear arms.

The Estate consisted of 317 acres in North Castle of which Claimt was entitled to $\frac{1}{4}$.

His Father had been in Possession 30 or 40 years. All improved. Hardly enough woodland left. 60 of Meadow in one piece. A good house & Barn & orchard. Vals. the Estate at £2,000 New York Cur^y. This Estate has been confiscated.

Produces Copy of Judgement against Benjamin Kipp, Claimt's Father, and confiscation of Estate. Claimant sys the whole has been sold, but that one of his Brothers, Willm., who continues in the States, is allowed $\frac{1}{4}$ for his share.

Lost 2 Horses & Colt when moving within the Lines. Taken by the Enemy. 1 horse killed in service. 1 taken by enemies. 1 horse and Cow taken by French. Lost Household furniture. Had furniture in his Brother In Law's house which was burnt, and Claimant lost furniture to amount of £20. Left 2 horses on his farm which he hired. Taken by the Rebels. 1 Negroe deserted to the enemy. Says he had no Half Pay, and Recd nothing for his services, except 50 Days' Pay as Captn. of a Troop of Horse. Col. Delancey certifies strongly to his Loyalty & active services.

Thomas Kipp sworn saith:

He is a Bror. to Claimt. His Father Benjamin was banished for his Loyalty and proscribed & joined the Brit., in Nov., 1778. Died within the Lines. His estate was confiscated.

The Claimant joined the Brit. soon after the Battle of Long Island. Continued to serve during the war. Benjamin Kipp died in 1780, having made his Will, & left the Remr. of his Estate to his 4 sons. Willm., eldest son, now in the States. James who came to this Country since dead. His Wife and Son are gone to the States, his eldest Son is an Infant. Saml. Kipp, 3rd Bro. the Claimant. Thomas the present Witness who lived at Digby.

The Will has not been proved. It is attested by Mary Free, Thomas Kipp, Wits., Saml. Kipp, a Cousin of Claimants, Benjamin Kipp had an elder Son, who died in his Life time, named Jesse who has left a Son named Benjamin who lives in the States and is Heir at Law. Witness says that if his Father had died without a Will, or the Will is set aside, the whole goes to the Heir at Law by Laws of New York. The land was sold. Willm. Kipp is allowed to hold his part $\frac{1}{4}$ of the Estate.

The farm consisted of 317 acres & $\frac{1}{2}$. Vals. It at £2,000. Knew that Claimant lost horses on moving within the Lines. Thinks he left horses behind him when he joined the Brit. Knew that he lost horses in service.

James Dickens, Wits:

Knew the Estate of Benj. Kipp, but not particularly, but vals. Lands situated as those were in West Chester at £6.10 or 7 New York Curr. per acre. Thinks it was an average Price for Lands in that situation.

Claimant is told he must get Certificate of the Sale.

(Second Report of the Bureau of Archives for the Province of Ontario, 1904, Vol. II, page 763.)

Appendix VII

Declaration of Oliver Smith and his wife Elizabeth Knapp, on the marriage of Samuel Kipp and Mary Knapp.

On this eleventh day of the month of February in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and thirty six Before the undersigned public notaries duly admitted and sworn in for the province of Lower Canada residing at the City of Montreal in the said Province came and appeared Mr. Oliver Smith of Parish of Montreal Gentleman and Mrs. Elizabeth Knapp his wife by him duly authorized to the effect thereof who have severally declared, that is to say the said Oliver Smith that he was particularly acquainted with the late Captain Samuel Kipp and Mary Knapp that they were married at Fannings Burg in Nova Scotia, North America and publicly passed for man and wife legally married from and after the time of that marriage which took place about the year one thousand seven hundred and eighty eight. The said Elizabeth Knapp further declared that the said Mary Knapp is her sister is now living in the parish of Montreal and that she was present at her said marriage solemnized before James Stewart Justice of the peace at the Gut of Canseau as the(n) Customary Done and passed at the City of Montreal the day and year first above written and appearors have signed with us the said notaries these presents having been first duly read in their presence.

Signed Elizabeth Knapp
Signed Oliver Smith
Signed N.B. Doucet, N.P.
Signed P.C. Valois, N.P.

(Document No. 23282, 11 February 1836, Clerk of the Court of N.B. Doucet, notary at Montreal)

Appendix VIII

Memorial of Mary Knapp widow of Samuel Kipp, soliciting a pension as a widow of an officer:

Memorial of Mrs. Mary Kipp to his Excellency The Governor in Chief.

To his Excellency the Right Honourable the Early of Dalhousie, Knight Grand Cross of the Most Honourable Military Order of the Bath, Captain General and Governor in Chief in and over the Provinces of Lower Canada, Upper Canada, Nova Scotia, New Brunswick, and their Several Dependencies, Lieutenant General and Commander in

Chief of all his Majesty's Forces in the said Provinces and in the Islands of Newfoundland, Cape Breton, Prince Edwards, & Bermuda &c, &c, &c.

The Memorial of Mrs. Mary Kipp of the City of Montreal Respectfully Sheweth

That your Memorialist's late husband Captain Samuel Kipp faithfully served His Majesty during the whole of the Rebellion of the American Colonies, previously as a Subaltern and Subsequently as a Captain in the Cavalry division of that Provincial Corps called the West Chester Loyallists, without ever receiving or demanding any remuneration for his Services during that time.

That during that Period, he signalized himself by his Courage and activity in several General Actions and Skirmishes, in one of which he had his body pierced through by a Bayonet, which ultimately caused his death on the 14th February 1802.⁽¹⁾

(1). The exact date is the 23 February 1803.

That your Memorialist's said Husband, after the Cessation of the War, retired, with other Loyallists, into Nova Scotia from whence he Removed into Lower Canada, where he died, having like the other officers of the Same Corps, drawn half pay, till the day of his decease.

That there still survives one officer of the said Corps. Captain Moses Knapp, your Memorialist's father, who, since its reduction, has received, and still continues to receive half pay.

That your Memorialist, in the year of her husband's death caused a friend to write, on the Subject of her Pension as a Captains Widow, to an Army Agent in London, but having received no answer, she was discouraged and has made no application till the Present, to which she has been impelled by the circumstances of Mrs. Lindsay (the Relict of Captain Lindsay of the Provincial Corps called the Pioneers) receiving her Pension Regularly.

That your Memorialist on the Demise of her Husband, was left with four small children without the means for their Support, but her own Industry.

That your Memorialist therefore humbly prays that your Excellency may be pleased to recommend to His Royal Highness, the Commander in Chief, that your Memorialist may receive the Arrears of her Pension as a Captains Widow from the 14th of February 1802 (the date of her Husbonds Decease) and that it may be continued till her death.

And your Memorialist, as in Duty bound will ever Pray &c &c &c.

Montreal 21st December 1820

Signed May Kipp

We the undersigned, do certify the Memorialist is a lady of the most respectable character, and such as she has represented herself in the above Memorial.

James Hughes, J.M.
John Johnson

(Public Archives of Canada, Ottawa, Ont., C-192, 1820, page 105.)

Appendix IX

Deposition of Moses Knapp before the Commissioner Pemberton, in support of his claim.

New Claim.

To the Commissioners appointed by Act of Parliament for enquiring into the Losses and Services of the American Loyalists –

The Memorial of Capt. Moses Knapp, late of Westchester, now of Cumberland County in Nova Scotia – Humbly Sheweth,

That he joined the British Army in New York in 1777, and afterwards as a Volunteer in the West Chester Refugees until the Conclusion of the War.

That in consequence of his Loyalty and Attachment to the British Government he has lost the Property mentioned in the annexed Schedule.

He there fore prays that you will take his Case into your Consideration in Order that under your Report he may be enabled to receive such Aid and Relief as his Losses and Services may be found to deserve.

Memorialist's Losses are as follows: Viz.

His lands values at	£400. “. “
2 Yoke of Oxen £ 25 each	£ 50.
5 Cows and 4 young Cattle	£ 42.
35 Sheep and 4 Hogs	£ 21.10.
1 Set of Black Smith Tools	£ 30.
Household Goods and Farming Utensils	£100.
3 Horses	£ 36.
1 Horse killed in Action	£ 50.
1 Negroe	£ 52.
Grain	£ 20.
5 Horses and 1 Cow taken by French Army & other damage sustained by them	£115.
3 Horses left in new York	£ 55.
Book Debts to the amount of	£201.
New York Currency	£1172.10.
Equal in Sterling to	£658.10. 9

City of St. John 30th October 1786.

Evidence on the Claim of Moses Knapp, late of West Chester.

Claimant Sworn,

Says he with many others of DeLanceys Refugees left New York in June 1783 for Fort Cumberland in Nova Scotia, where they arrived in July, and did not hear of an Act of the British Parliament being passed in favour of the Loyalists until late in the Season, that immediately upon the account of the Act reaching Cumberland, the Loyalists joined and gave their claims to Major Bruce to be delivered to Colonel Delancey. But he understands they arrived too late.

He is a Native of New York Province, in 1775 he lived in Dutchess County. Says he never took any part with the Rebels, but always openly and uniformly declared his Sentiments in favour of Great Britain. He never signed an Association or bore Arms with the Americans.

The inhabitants of Dutchess County were in general Loyal, by which he means he was able to remain until 1777, when being ordered to join the Militia to act against the British at Kings Bridge he fled for Refuge within the British Lines.

He remained with the Army during the War acting with Colonel Delanceys Refugees, and in July 1783 he came to Nova Scotia and is now settled at Ramshag in Cumberland County.

Produces Commission as Captain in Colonel Delanceys Refugees dated 16th November 1779, signed William Tryon, And A Commission from Sir Guy Carleton to take charge of a Company to Cumberland Dated June 1783.

Colonel Delancey Certifies to Loyalty & Services.

Property. A lease for ever of 200 Acres in Dutchess County the Property of Colonel Roger Morris. The Lease was granted to the Claimant in 1771, he purchased the Improvements for £230 New York Currency, he paid an Annual Rent of £4.10.” and the improvements were his own.

After the Purchase he built a House and Barn which cost him £100 Currency and made Improvements on the Land. It was all cultivated, only what was necessary for Timber &c.

He thinks his Interest in this Farm was worth £400 Currency.

One widow Brewer is in possession of this, he believes it was sold as the Property of Colonel Roger Morris.

A Negroe purchased in 1782 from an Inhabitant of West Chester says he gave £30 Currency for him, he remained behind when he left New York, he went into the Country, he claims £52.

Household Furniture and Farming Tools left on his Farm

Household Furniture and Farming Tools left on his Farm	£100.
Two Yoke of Oxen fatted 25 p Yoke	£ 50.
Five Cows and four young Cattle	£ 42.
Thirty Five Sheep and Four Hogs	£ 21.10
A Sett of Black Smith Tools	£ 30.
Three Horse, working Cattle	£ 36.
A Horse killed in Action He had been offered that for him.	£ 50.
Grain in the Barn	£ 20.
Five Horses and a Cow taken by the French Army in 1781	£115.
Three Horses left at New York	£ 55.
Debts due him before the War	£201.

Swears all this property is lost to him.

Witness Abraham Covort Swor,
He lived near Claimant before the War, he was uniform in his Attachment to Great Britain, he never took any part with them, and was fined for not serving in the Militia.

In 1777 he fled within the British Lines, and has been Active with the Refugees ever since.

Remembers his purchasing the Improvements on 200 Acres of the Estate of Colonel Roger Morris about 1771, believes he gave £200 for them, and afterwards built a House Barn and Shop.

Thinks he might have sold them for 300 or £400 Currency.
One third belonged to the Landlord.
Witness knows that the Rebel Committee took all his Stock and Household Furniture.
He had a Horse shot at East Chester, he was a fine one worth £25 Currency.
Has heard him say the French Army plundered him in 1781.

Witness Abraham Hatfield Sworn.
Knew Claimant before the War, he was always esteemed a Friend to Great Britain, he took Refuge within the Lines as he could not remain on his Property.
Remembers his Farm, it was a good Cultivation, and thinks the Improvements would have sold for £300 Currency.

He gave £80 for a Negroe during the War.
His Farm was well stocked, and his House was well furnished,

His Family was sent to New York and his Property Seized.
He has a Horse shot at East Chester worth £50 Currency.

(Depositors of Loyalists Manuscripts in the New York Public Library, Vol. 18, pages
255 to 263.)

Appendix X

Testament of Moses Knapp made at St. John, New Brunswick, the 16 August 1800:

Will of Moses Knapp

St. John, New Brunswick
August 16th 1800.

In the Name of God Amen, this sixteenth day of August One Thousand Eight Hundred, I
Moses Knapp of the City of Saint John in the Province of New Brunswick, Husbandman,
being of sound mind and perfect memory, and considering the uncertainty of an
Approaching Death, Do Ordain this my last will and Testament.

My Soul I commend unto the hands of God who gave it and my Body to the Earth to be
decently buried at the discretion of my Executor hereafter named, trusting in God and
believing that it will be raised again at the final Refurrection by the Almighty Power of
God.

Imprimus, I give and bequeath unto my well beloved wife Elsey Knapp all my Real and
Personal Estate of what kind soever and wheresoever the same may be found to her and
to her heirs and afsigns forever.

Lastly I hereby appoint my said wife Elsey Knapp my Sole Executrix to this my last Will
and Testament. In Witness Whereof I have hereunto set my hand and affixed my Seal
this day and year above written.

Signed Moss Knapp

(L.S.)

Signed Sealed and Delivered

In presence of us

Sgd John Rosenell

Sgd Jon. Leavitt

Sgd Elijah Tilton

Appendix XI

Deposition of Isaac Hatfield, in support of his claim:

Evidence in the proceedings of the Loyalists Commissioners before Commissioner Jeremy Pemberton at St. Johns, New Brunswick, On October 22nd, 1786.

618. Claim of Isaac Hatfield, Junr., late of West Chester, Prov, New York.

Claimt. Sworn Saith:

He lived in this Province in the Fall, 1783, at Digby. Heard of the Act in the Fall, about the time of Evacuating New York. Many people neglected to send. He was doubtful whether he should send any Claim. In Jany. or Feby., 1784 he delivered his Claim to Mr. Harday; he said he was then going to England. Claimt. Delivered it at Halifax. It must have been early Feby. or late in Jany., 1784.

He is a native of America; resided in West Chester Co. when Troubles broke out. On breaking out of Troubles, from the first took part with Brit. Was required by rebels to serve in their Militia, & sign their Association, which he refused. In consequence of this he made himself obnoxious. They fin'd him which he refused to pay, & he was obliged to quit home.

Joined the Brit on their first landing on Long Island. Joined as volunteer in Queen's Rangers. Continued all that winter in that service. Had the command of a Company. Afterwards joined Col. Delancey. Afterwards had a Commission as Captn. In West Chester Militia and then Lieutenant Col. in same Militia. Continued in the service during the War, at his own expense; has no half pay. Came to this Province from New York in Sumr. 1783. Now settled at Digby.

When he left home in 1776 he lost 18 Head Cattle, 4 Horses, farm horses, 50 sheep, left them on his farm in West Chester when he went away. Heard of some being taken by one person, some by another, some for fines.

While Claimt. was stationed at King's Bridge with Commission from Govr. Tryon as Lieut. Col., he was attached about Jany. 1780 at his Quarters, the house set on fire, & he lost cash £32.13.3. House, furniture, £13.1.4 Cloaths 58. Lost Horse, Vals. 42. It was kill'd in action at the time his Quarters were attacked. He was taken Prisoner & carried to New England; remained Prisoner about 3 months. Claims for expenses, £ 30.

Thomas Kepp (Kipp), Wits.:

Knew Claimant. He was always reckoned a Loyalist. Witness came within the Lines in 1779. He then served, as an officer in West Chester Militia. In the Fall he raised the Regiment of Militia and had the Commission of Lieut, Col. Witness served with him. He

acted as Lieutenant. Remembers the attack on his Quarters at Morris House near No. 8, King's Bridge, Jany., 1780. The House was burnt. Claimant was taken Prisoner.

Claimt. Lost Cloths, furniture, - of his horses, money; he lost one horse shot by his enemy, worth 40 gns., a very fine horse. He remained Prisoner 3 months. He was then exchanged.

Claimt. Produces Comn. from Govr Tryon dated 16 Nov. 1779, appointing him Lt. Col. Commander, West Chester Refugees.

(Second Report of the Bureau of Archives for the Province of Ontario, 1904, pp. 755-6.)

Appendix XII

Letter from James Kipp, to professor Henry of the Smithsonian Institute, dated the 12 August 1872.

Barry, Clay County, Missouri,
August 12, 1872.

Dear Sir,

Though a stranger to you, I take the liberty of addressing you this note as important to science; and to the ethnology of our country, as well as important to the reputation of one who has devoted much of a long and hazardous life to portraying and perpetuating the customs of the dying races of man in America. Mr. Schoolcraft sent me some years past, a copy of a large work he had published for the Government of the United States on the North American Indians, and of which work some thousands of copies were presented by the Government to the libraries of the institutions of the New and the Old World.

In this work I find Mr. Schoolcraft denies the truth of Mr. Catlin's description of the Mandan religious ceremonies, the truth of his assertion that the Mandan youths suspended the weight of their bodies by splints run through the flesh on the breast and shoulders. etc. and asserts also, that his whole account of the Mandan religion is all wrong. It is a great pity that Mr. Schoolcraft, who never visited the Mandans, should have put forth such false and unfounded assertions as these on a subject so important to science, and so well established by proved facts.

I had the sole control of the American Fur Company's business with the Mandans, and lived in their village for the space of thirteen years, from 1822 to 1835, and was doubtless the first white man who learned to speak their language. In the summer of 1832 Mr. George Catlin was a guest in my fort at the Mandan village, observing and learning the customs of the interesting and peculiar people, and painting the portraits of their celebrated men, of which he had many and with great exactness. It was during that summer that Mr. Catlin witnessed the Mandan religious ceremonies, the O-kee-pa described in his notes of travels among the North American Indians, and to which Mr.

Schoolcraft has applied the insulting epithet of falsity in his great work. By the certificates published by Mr. Catlin signed by my chief clerk and myself, on the 23rd day of July, 1832 in the Mandan village, certifying that we witnessed, in company with Mr. Catlin, the whole of those four days ceremonies, and that he has represented in his four paintings, then and there made of them, exactly what we saw, and without addition or exaggeration, it will be seen that I witnesses these scenes with Mr. Catlin and interpreted their whole meaning for him as they are described in his work. Since the almost extinction of this friendly tribe, and the end of this peculiar and unaccountable custom, and in the eighty-fifth year of my own age, from a sense of duty to my ancient friend, Mr. Catlin, and a wish for the truthfulness of history, I have taken the liberty of committing to your care and for your use as you may be disposed, the foregoing statements.

Signed James Kipp

Professor Henry, Smithsonian Institution.

(Report of the National Museum, 1885, Washington, D.C., 1886, Part II, Appendix V, page 381.)

Appendix XIII

Act of marriage of Médard Bruguière to Elizabeth Kipp, at the Church of Notre Dame at Montreal, the 15th of February 1808:

The 15th of February one thousand eight hundred and eight after the publication of the bans of marriage as much in this parish as in that of Saint Pierre du Portage without hindrance or opposition and after having obtained exemption of two other bans of Messire Jean Henry Auguste Roux Vicar-general of this diocese, I the undersigned priest performed the curatal functions by taking the mutual consent by the promise of those present of Sr. Jean Baptiste Médard Bruguière underage son of Jean Baptiste Bruguiere Major of the Militia consenting and the deceased lady Marie Magdeleine Massu of Saint Pierre du Portage on one part, and of the damsel Elizabeth Kipp underage daughter of the deceased Sr. Captain Samuel Kipp squire and his lady Marie Knapp guardian consenting on the other part were married following the laws and customs observed in the Holy Church in the presence of the Srs. Amable Archambault brother-in-law of the wife of Jean Baptiste Bruguiere his brother Jean Baptiste Fournier and several others who signed with us and the couple.

Signed Elizabeth Kipp

Signed Médard Bruguière

Signed J.B. Fournier

Signed J. Bte. Bruguière

Signed Michel Fournier

Signed Amable Archambault

Signed D. Gianonaly

Signed Sophie Routier
Signed Nancy Patterson
Signed Marguerite Gauthier
Signed Richard Smith
Signed James Smith
Signed Susanna Smith
Signed Chatrine (sic) Bruguière
Signed Moses Knapp
Signed Nancy Dieffenbach
Signed Marie Lousie Fornier
Signed Thomas Fournier
Signed Ls. Saulnier, ptr.

Bibliography

Works Consulted

1. The Encyclopedia Americana, The Americana Corp., New York and Chicago, 1942.
2. The Abridged Compendium of American Genealogy.
3. Baptisms from 1639 to 1730 in the Reformed Dutch Church, New York, in the Collections of the New York Genealogical and Biographical Society, New York, 1901.
4. Biographical Sketches of Loyalists of the American Revolution, by Lorenzo Sabine, Boston, 1864.
5. Le Bulletin des Recherches Historiques, P.G. Roy. [The Bulletin of Historical Research.]
6. Régistres des baptêmes, mariages et sépultures de nombreuses paroisses catholiques et protestantes. [Registers of baptisms, marriages and burials of many catholic and protestant parishes.]
7. Colonial Families of the United States, edited by George N. MacKenzie and Nelson O. Rhodes.
8. The Royal Commission on the Losses and Services of American Loyalists, 1783 to 1785, Oxford.
9. La Côte ou le Coteau Baron à Montréal, par E.X. Massicotte, Bulletin des Recherches Historiques, 1943.
10. The De Forest of Avesnes and New Netherland, by J.W. De Forest, New Haven, 1900.
11. Depositions of Loyalists Manuscripts, New York Public Library, New York.
12. Archives privées de feu Georges Derome, Montréal.
13. Dictionary of American Biography, Chas. Scribner's Sons, New York, 1930.
14. Dictionnaire biographique du Clergé Canadien-Français, par l'abbé J.B.A. Allaire, Montréal, 1910.
15. Dictionnaire Généalogique des Familles Canadiennes par Mgr. C. Tanguay, Montreal, 1871.
16. Documentary History of the State of New York, by E. B. O'Callaghan, Albany, 1849-51.
17. Documents relative to the Colonial History of the State of New York procured in Holland, England and France, by J.B. Brodhead, edited by E.B. O'Callaghan, Albany, 1856-61.
18. The Dutch and Quaker Colonies in America by John Fiske, London, 1899.
19. General History of Dutchess County, New York, 1609 to 1876, by P.H. Smith, Pawling, 1877.
20. Histoire des États-Unis, par André Maurois, New York, 1944.
21. Archives privées de J.A.N. Ferland, N.P., de Joliette, P.Q.
22. Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England, by J. Savage, Boston, 1861-62.
23. Holgate's American Genealogy.
24. La Famille Godefroy de Tonnancourt, par P.G. Roy, Lévis, 1904.

25. Harper's New Monthly Magazine, New York, 1885.
26. The Hatfields of Westchester, by Abraham Hatfield, New York, 1935.
27. Historical View of the Commission for Inquiry into the Losses, Services, and Claims of the American Loyalists, J.E. Wilmot, London, 1815.
28. The Huguenot Settlers of New York City and its Vicinity by F.W. Ballard, in Valentine's Manual, 1862.
29. Joliette Illustré, 1843-1893, par Albert Gervais, Joliette, 1893.
30. Le Centenaire – Joliette, 1823-1923, Joliette, 1923.
31. History of the Town of Kingsbridge, now part of the ... City of New York, by T.E. Edsall, New York, 1887.
32. History of the Kip Family in America, by Frederic Ellsworth Kip, of Montclair, N.J. and Margarita Lansing Hawley, Boston, 1928.
33. Records of the Knapp Family Association, New York.
34. Laws of the Legislature of the State of New York in force against the Loyalists, Reynells, London, 1786.
35. The Literary History of the American Revolution, by Moses Coit Tyler, Professor of American History at Cornell University, New York and London, 1897.
36. Liste des Terrains concédés par la Couronne dans la Province de Quebec, de 1763 au 31 décembre 1890.
37. American Loyalists Audit Office Transcriptions.
38. Loyalism in New York during the American Revolution, by Alexander C. Flick, 1901.
39. The Loyalists of America and their times, 1620-1816, by E. Ryerson, Toronto, 1880.
40. The Loyalists in the American Revolution, by Claude Halstead Van Tyne, Peter Smith, New York, 1929.
41. The Makers of Canada, Series by A.G. Bradley, Toronto, 1910.
42. List of Person to whom Marriage Licenses were issued by the Secretary of the Province of New York previous to 1784, by E.B. O'Callaghan, Albany, 1860.
43. Marriages from 1639 to 1801 in the Reformed Dutch Church, New York, New York, 1890, in the Collections of the New York Genealogical and Biographical Society.
44. "La Minerve," Montréal.
45. De Pierre Minuit aux Roosevelt, par Robert Goffin, New York, 1943.
46. New Brunswick Museum Archives, St. John, N.B.
47. New Brunswick Loyalist Society Records.
48. Probate Court, St. John, N.B.
49. History of New Netherland or New York under the Dutch, by E.B. O'Callaghan, New York, 1845-8.
50. New York Act of Attainder, 1779.
51. New York Genealogical and Biographical Society.
52. The Olden Time in New York, by W.I. Kip, 1872.
53. History of New York during the Revolutionary War, by Thomas Jones, New York, 1879.
54. Contributions to the History of the Ancient Dutch Families of New York, by J. Pearson, in the New York Genealogical and Biographical Record, 1877.

55. Contributions to the History of the Ancient Families of New York, by E.R. Purple, in the New York Genealogical and Biographical Record, 1877.
56. History of the City of New York in the Seventeenth Century, by Mrs. Schuyler Van Rensselaer, New York, 1909.
57. The Annals of Newtown, by James Riker, Jr., 1852.
58. Archives de la Chambre des Notaires de la Province de Québec.
59. Histoire du Notariat au Canada, par J. Edmond Roy, Lévis, 1899-1902.
60. Graffes de divers notaires de Montréal et autres districts de la Province de Québec.
61. Loyalists and Land Settlement in Nova Scotia, Publication No. 4 of the Public Archives of Nova Scotia, Halifax, 1937.
62. Officers of the British Forces in Canada during the War of 1812-15, by L. Homfray Irving, Welland, 1908.
63. Second Report of the Bureau of Archives for the Province of Ontario, 1904, Toronto, 1905.
64. Orderly Book of the Three Battalions of Loyalists commanded by Brig. Gen. Oliver De Lancey, 1776-78 (N.Y. Hist. Soc. 1917.)
65. The Parish Register of Kingston, Upper Canada, 1785-1811, by A.H. Young, Kingston, 1921.
66. The Party of the Loyalists in the American Revolution, in the American Historical Review, I, 24.
67. "Le Pays," Montréal.
68. Pioneering in the Northwest, Niobrara-Virginia Wagon Road, by Albert N. Holman – Pioneers Short Sketches of Charles Floyd, War Eagle, Theophile Bruguier and Others, by Constant R. Marks, published by Deitch and Lamar Co., Sioux City, Iowa, 1924.
69. Public Record Office, London, England.
70. Archives de la Province de Québec.
71. Quelle Vie, par Adrienne Maillet, Montréal, 1940.
72. Répertoire Général du Clergé Canadien, par l'abbé C. Tanguay, Quebec, 1868.
73. The Amazing Roosevelt Family, 1613-1942, by Karl Schriftgiesser, New York, 1942.
74. Salix – History, by Louis N. Duchaine.
75. Past and Present of Sioux City and Woodbury County, Iowa, by Constant R. Marks.
76. "Le Spectateur," Montréal.
77. St. Jérôme de Terrebonne, par l'abbé Elie J. Auclair, St. Jérôme, 1934.
78. Histoire de la Seigneurie de St. Ours, par l'abbé A. Couillard Després, Montréal, 1917.
79. Sur les Pas de Marthe et de Marie; congrégations de femmes au Canada Français, Montreal, 1929.
80. Archives of the Incorporated Synod of the Diocese of Ontario, Kingston, Ont.
81. The Tercentenary History of Canada, by Frank Basil Tracy, Toronto, 1908.
82. The United Empire Loyalists, by A.G. Bradley, London, 1932.
83. History of the United States, by Geo. Bancroft, London, Routledge, 1854.
84. Westchester County Historical Society, White Plains, New York.

85. Westchester County Churches, by the Rev. Robert Bolton.
86. The History of the several towns, manors and patents of the county of Westchester from its first settlement to the present time, by the late Rev. Robert Bolton, New York, 1881.
87. Origin and History of Manors in New York and in the County of Westchester, by E.F. De Lancey, New York 1866.
88. History of Westchester County, New York, by J.T. Scharf, Philadelphia, 1886.
89. History of Westchester County New York from its earliest settlement to the year 1900, by F. Shonnard and W.W. Spooner, New York, 1900.
90. Westchester County during the American Revolution 1775-1783, by Otto Hufeland, 1926.
91. Papers relating to Westchester County (1656-1782) in Documentary History of the State of New York, by E.B. O'Callaghan, Albany, 1849-1851.
92. Westchester County Land Records.
93. Early wills of Westchester County from 1664-1784 with genealogical and historical notes, by W.S. Pelletreau, 1898.
94. The Winslow Papers, edited by W.O. Raymond, 1901.
95. Les Vieilles Familles d'Yamachiche, par F.L. Désaulniere, Montréal, 1898-1908.
96. Archives Publiques du Canada, Ottawa.
97. "L'Etoile du Nord," Joliette, P.Q.
98. "Action Populaire," Joliette, P.Q.
99. Dictionnaire historique et géographique des Paroisses, Missions et Municipalites de la Province de Quebec, par Hormisda Magnan, Arthabaska, 1925.
100. Courte Notice sur la Vie et les Oeuvres de Louis Joseph Amédée Derome, par l'abbé Elie J. Auclair, Montréal, 1922.
101. The Davenport Family of England and America, 1686 to 1850, by A. Benedict Davenport, 1851 to 1876, 2 Vols.
102. The Spy, by J. Fenimore Cooper, London, 1821.
103. La Famille Tardieu de Lanaudière, par P.G. Roy, Lévis, 1922.
104. A Geography and History of the County of Digby, Nova Scotia, by Isaiah W. Wilson, Halifax, N.S.
105. Centennial Prize Essay on the History of the City and County of St. John, by D.R. Jack, St. John, N.B., 1883.
106. The River St. John, by Rev. William O. Raymond, Sackville, N.B., 1843.
107. Loyalists Centennial Souvenir, 1783-1883.
108. Manuscripts of Loyalist Petitions to England.
109. Onderdonk's Revolutionary Incidents of the Counties of Queen's, Suffolk and King's, New York.
110. Church Record of Trinity Parish, Digby, N.S.
111. Force's American Archives.
112. History of Chatauqua County, by A.W. Young, 1875.
113. Col. David Fanning's Narrative, with Introduction by A.W. Savary, Toronto, 1908.
114. History of the County of Annapolis, by W.A. Calneck and A.W. Savary, Toronto, 1897.
115. Heath's Memoirs of the American War, New York, 1904.

116. Public Papers of George Clinton, Albany, 1899-1914.
117. Historic Westchester, 1683-1933, by Elizabeth Cushman.
118. The McDonald Papers, in the Publications of the Westchester Historical Society, White Plains, New York, 1927.
119. With the fathers: studies in the history of the United States, by John B. McMaster, New York, 1896.
120. New York State Library, 100th Annual Report 1917, Albany, 1918.
121. "Rivington's Gazette," New York.
122. Stormont, Dundas and Glengarry, a History, 1784-1945, by John Graham Harkness, K.C., Oshawa, 1946.
123. The Canadian Antiquarian and Numismatic Journal.
124. Dictionary of National Biography, by Sidney Lee, The McMillan Co., London, 1897.
125. The Disposition of Loyalist Estates in the Southern District of the State of New York, by H.B. Yoshpe, New York, 1939.
126. Muster Roll of Disbanded Officers, Discharged and Disbanded Soldiers and Loyalists mustered at Digby the 29th day of May 1784, by Judge A.W. Savary in the New York Genealogical and Biographical Record, Vol. 34, p. 123.
127. Remarriage of Loyalists, by Judge A.W. Savary, in the New York Genealogical and Biographical Record, Vol. 29, 1898, page 174.
128. Gazetteer of Pioneers and Others in North Dakota previous to 1862 in collections of the State Historical Society of North Dakota.
129. New York, Westchester County, Court of Oyer and Terminer. Depositions and indictments against various residents ... who have adhered to the enemies of the State --- Misc. M.S. Materials, New York State Counties and Towns, New York Public Library.
130. Travels in the Interior of North America, by Maximilian, Prince of Wied. Translated from the German by Hannibal Evans Lloyd and published in "Early Western Travels." By Reuben Gold Thwaites, L.L.D., Cleveland, 1906.
131. Les Mélanges Religieux.
132. Philipse Manor Hall at Yonkers. E.H. Hall, New York, 1912.
133. Letters and Notes on the manners, customs and conditions of the North American Indians, by Geo. Catlin, Philadelphia, 1857.
134. The American Fur Trade of the Far West, by Hiram Martin Chittenden, New York, 1902.

General Index to Names of Persons

(Blanchard, Pierre.....	92
(Belledeaux), Merlin Joseph	Blazing Could	64
71	Bogardus, Anneke Jans.....	13
A	Bogardus, Domine Everardus	13
Algie, Robert.....	Boivin, Blanche.....	88
49	Bonard, Andre.....	82
Amiot, M.....	Bonard, André.....	88
66	Bonard, Anne Rachel Louise	88
Andre, Major.....	Bonard, Jean.....	81, 83, 87
10	Bonard, Léon.....	81
Archambault, Alfred Canon.....	Bonard, Marcel	81
85	Bonard, Marie Rachel Michelle.....	88
Archambault, Amable	Bonard, Marie Rolland Andrée.....	88
58, 66, 68, 138	Bonard, Paul.....	73, 81, 87, 88
Archambault, Frs.....	Bonard, Renée.....	88
59, 66	Bonard-Filiatrault, Rachel.....	81
Archambault, Marie Tharisie Elizabeth	Bonin, Jos priest.....	78
.....	Bonnin, Mrs.	111
66	Bonnin, Mrs. Merey	120
Archambault, P. U.....	Boulet, Dr. M.S.....	61
66	Boulet, Marie Josephe.....	61
Archambault, Priscille.....	Bouton, Daniel	124
66	Boyle, Margarita	63
Archambault, Victoire Eleonore Pamela	Brace, Major	127, 128
Ozine	Brady, John B.....	16
66	Brassard, T.S priest.....	77
Archambault, Zéphirin.....	Breen, Marie Anne.....	64, 72
66	Brewner, Sarah.....	45, 47, 49
Armstrong, D. N.	Brown, James.....	124
67	Bruce, Major	133
Arnold, Silas	Brugière, Médard	55
16	Bruguier, Charles	111
Ashdore, Henry (Astor)	Bruguier, Jean Baptiste Médard.....	65
27	Bruguier, Marie Elizabeth Rachel.....	65
Astor, John Jacob	Bruguier, Médard.....	66
27	Bruguier, Rachelle	66
Auclair, Elie J. abbot.....	Bruguier, Theophile	113
75	Bruguier, Théophile	105, 106
Ayote, Henry.....	Bruguière , Médard	4
113	Bruguière,.....	74
B	Bruguière, André (Andrew).....	65
Barron, Thomas.....	Bruguière, Andrew.....	120
44, 56, 60	Bruguière, Baptiste	120
Beauchesne, Avila.....	Bruguière, Charles	65
92		
Beaudoin, Louis		
90		
Beaudoin, Pierre Paul.....		
84, 90		
Beaudry, P. Priest.....		
61		
Beaulieu, Clarence		
83, 89		
Beaulieu, Jacqueline		
89		
Beaulieu, Roger.....		
89		
Belledeaux.....		
62, 71		
Benedict, Peter		
124		
Bengle, Dorothy.....		
80, 86, 87		
Bengle, Ernest.....		
86		
Bergevin, Gêrar priest.....		
92		
Bernhardt, Prince		
87		
Bessette, Lily.....		
64		
Bethune, John.....		
41, 45, 46, 47		
Bigelow		
41		
Bissonnette, Adrienne		
73		
Blanchard, Léopold.....		
92		

Bruguière, Charles	59, 120	Bruyère, Elizabeth Mother	105
Bruguière, Chatrine (sic).....	58, 139	Bruyère, Mother Elisabeth	59
Bruguière, Elizabeth	105	Bull, George	15
Bruguière, Eugene (Eugent).....	65	Burnett, Helen	50
Bruguière, Eugent	120		
Bruguière, J. Bte.	58, 138	C	
Bruguière, Jacques	60	Cabana, Alexis	79
Bruguière, Jean B.....	105	Cabana, Alexis Hilaire Alexandre	79
Bruguière, Jean Baptist	105	Cabana, Joseph.....	79
Bruguière, Jean Baptiste	64	Cadieux, Hubert C.	74
Bruguière, Jean Baptiste	58, 138	Caisse, Angélique	79
Bruguière, Jean Baptiste Médard.....	58	Carleton, Sir Guy	31, 42, 133
Bruguière, John	121	Carpenter, Dan	101
Bruguière, John (Jean)	65	Carpenter, Zipporah	15, 32
Bruguière, Joseph.....	65	Carpenter, Zipporah.....	34
Bruguière, Joseph.....	120	Castanier, Berthe.....	86, 92
Bruguière, Julia	65	Castanier, Dosithé	92
Bruguière, Julia	120	Catlin, George	97, 101, 137
Bruguière, Marie (Mary).....	65	Caya, Arthur.....	89
Bruguière, Marie Elizabeth Rachel60, 65		Caya, Charles Thomas	82
Bruguière, Marie Esther.....	60	Caya, Dorothee Hortense	89
Bruguiere, Marie Rachel.....	75	Caya, Hector	83
Bruguière, Marie Rachel.....	77	Caya, Jean Lucien	83
Bruguière, Mary	120	Caya, Jeanette	89
Bruguière, Médard39, 41, 58, 59, 60, 61,		Caya, Jeannette	83
65, 68, 105, 122, 138		Caya, Joseph Trefflé	76, 82
Bruguière, Médard	64	Caya, Joseph Trefflé	88, 89
Bruguiere, Rachel	72	Caya, Louis Joseph Henri Alphonse... 83	
Bruguière, Rachel	66	Caya, Marguerite.....	82, 88
Bruguière, Rose.....	65	Caya, Paul	83, 89
Bruguière, Rose.....	120	Chapdelaine, J. B.	61
Bruguière, Rose-Anne.....	79	Chapman, Benjamin.....	124
Bruguière, Rose-Anne (or Rosianne).. 68		Charles of Saint Ours	65
Bruguière, Rosianne.....	69	Charron, Hilaire	79
Bruguière, Samuel.....	65	Chénier	83
Bruguière, Samuel.....	121	Chief Heavy Runner	62
Bruguière, Selena.....	65	Ciquard, priest.....	67
Bruguière, Selena.....	120	Clifford, C.C	111
Bruguière, Theophile	60	Clinton, Sir Henry	10
Bruguière, Théophile 64, 70, 105, 120		Colden, Cadwallader.....	20
Bruguière, Urgel	59, 66	Colden, Elizabeth.....	20
Bruguière, Victoria	65	Coley, John	124
Bruguière, Vistoria.....	120	Conger, Cassius.....	65, 120
Bruguière, William	65	Conger, Mrs.	109, 111
Bruguière, William	121	Connolly.....	62, 71
Brunette, Mrs. Victoria	119	Cormack, William.....	41
		Côté, doctor.....	62

Crane, Thaddeus 124

D

Dalhousie, Count..... 40

Dalhousie, Early of 130

Davenport, Dorothy 8

Davenport, Dorothy ... 12, 15, 27, 38, 43,
45

Davenport, William..... 15

Dawn..... 65

De Forest, Jesse..... 10

De Forest, Rachel..... 10

de Hart, Cathalina 12

De Kype, Ruloff..... 8

de La Montagne, Jean 9

de La Montagne, Jean Mousnier..... 10

de La Montagne, Maria..... 9

de La Montagne, Maria..... 10, 11

de Lanaudière, Marie Antoinette Tarieu

Taillant 75

De Lancey, Colonel James..... 21, 31

De Lancey, Colonel Oliver 20, 21

De Lancey, Jame 32

De Lancey, James 20, 22

De Lancey, Peter..... 20

De Lancy, Catalina..... 11

de Lorimier, François Thomas..... 61

de Lorimier, Jules..... 74

de Lorimier, Louis Gustave 55, 61, 62

de Lorimier, Mary Ann..... 62

De Lorimier, Mr..... 74

de Riedesel, Baron 10

de Salaberry, Lilia Yrumberry 80

de Sille, Anna..... 9

De Smet, Rev. Père 71

de Solerène, Laurence..... 81

de St. Ours, Charles 65

de Tonnancour, Reine 65

de Verchères, Madeleine..... 75

Delancey, Col..... 128

Delancey, Colonel..... 127, 133

Delavan, Nathaniel..... 124

Delivan, Nath 123

Deneau, Stella 86

Denys 75

Derome, A. priest..... 85, 91

Derome, Alcide..... 68, 73

Derome, Amédée 61, 73, 74

Derome, Anna..... 74

Derome, Antoine..... 59

Derome, Antoinette..... 73, 85

Derome, Arthur 73, 85

Derome, Caroline..... 87

Derome, Charles Georges 80, 86

Derome, Emile 73

Derome, Evéline 74, 82

Derome, François Xavier 66, 67

Derome, François Xavier Arthur 68

DeRome, Frank X 59

Derome, G..... 85

Derome, George 84, 87

Derome, Georges 73

Derome, Georges Maurice 80, 86

Derome, Gustave..... 72, 74, 80, 81, 82

Derome, Hector..... 74

Derome, Hectorine..... 68

Derome, Hermine..... 79, 84, 85, 91

Derome, J. Amédée..... 85

Derome, Jean..... 81

Derome, Josephine..... 73

Derome, Joséphine68, 73, 75, 76, 82, 83,
84

DeRome, L. A. 66

Derome, L.A. 77, 78

Derome, L.J.A..... 85

DeRome, Lactea..... 59

Derome, Louis Antoine..... 4

Derome, Louis Antoine.... 60, 66, 67, 72,
74, 75, 77, 83

Derome, Louis Etienne 68

Derome, Louis Etienne Gustave 73

Derome, Louis Joseph Amédée ... 68, 74,
75, 80

Derome, M. Hermine 78

Derome, M. Joséphine 78

Derome, Marie Hermine 78

Derome, Marie Hermine 68, 77, 84

Derome, Marie Lilia Aline Stella

Geneviève 87

Derome, Maurice 87

Derome, Rachel..... 65, 73, 81, 87, 88

Derome, Rachel Bruguier..... 68

Derome, Théophile 73

Derome, Thomas.....	74, 85	Drake, Gilbert	124
Derome, Urgel.....	68	Drake, Mary	54
Deromer, Franc. X.	66	Du Cloux, Marie	10
Désaulniers, Almidas	69	Dubois, Gene.....	120
Désaulniers, Angéline	79	Dubois, Victor.....	65, 120
Désaulniers, F. L.	69	Dundas, Colonel Thomas.....	125
Désaulniers, Geo. L.....	61	Dupuis, Master Rosaire.....	92
Désaulniers, Georges	69	E	
Désaulniers, Laurent	4	Earth Woman	62
Désaulniers, Laurent	59	Ebel, Alice.....	53
Désaulniers, M. L.L.	78	Ebel, Peter	53
Désaulniers, Marie Angéline	69	F	
Désaulniers, Marie Louise	69	Fanning, Colonel Edmund	43
Désaulniers, Tancrede.....	69	Faribault, Eugène	66
Désaulniers, V. L.	61	Faribault, J. E.	66
Désaulniers, Victor	69	Felt, Catherine.....	45, 47, 49
Désaulniers-Lesieur, Laurent..	60, 69, 79	Felts, Catherine	48
Désautels, Charlotte	61	Filiatrault, Cyriac	81
Désautels, Charlotte Rachel.....	69	Filiatrault, Joseph.....	73, 81
Désautels, Elizabeth.....	61	Foerster, Mr.....	65
Désautels, François	60	Fournier, J.B.....	58
Désautels, Incie	61	Fournier, Jean Baptiste.....	138
Desautels, Joseph	55	Fournier, Marie Louise	58, 139
Désautels, Joseph	4	Fournier, Michel	58, 138
Désautels, Joseph . 40, 41, 44, 49, 60, 61, 68, 69, 70, 71, 96		Fournier, Thomas.....	59, 139
Désautels, Lucille (or Lucie).....	71	Fowler, Caleb	54
Désautels, Theodore.....	60	Fowler, Gabriel (Gilbert)	54
Desforges, Méline	62	Furman, Aaron	124
Desjardins, J.	85	G	
Desrochers, Eloise.....	83	Gadbois, Evéline	80, 81, 82
Dianonaly, D.	58	Gadbois, Marie Evéline	68, 73
Dickens, James.....	33, 129	Galbraith, Dexter.....	80
Dieffenbach, Nancy	139	Galbraith, Laxel Lorraine.....	80
Dieffenbech, Nancy	58	Galbraith, Miriam Kipp	80
dit Cabana, Hilaire Charron	79	Galbraith, Susan Francis	80
dit Jolicoeur, Marie Anne Houé.....	56	Gareau family.....	70
dit Langlois, Lucie Henry	81	Gareau, Pierre	70
Doire, Alice.....	83, 89	Garrison, Ann.....	54
Dorval, Urgel	61	Gaudry, Marie Anne .. 40, 41, 55, 56, 57, 63	
Dostaler, D. A.	61	Gaultier, Louis	57
Doucet, Cécile.....	86	Gauthier, Marguerite.....	57, 58, 139
Doucet, Joseph Edouard.....	94	Gerard, James Watson	13
Doucet, N.B.	130	Germain, Lord George	22
Doucet, Nicolas Benjamin	35, 46, 48		
Doucet, T.....	50		

Gianonaly, D. 138
 Giroux, Rollande..... 82, 88
 Giroux, William 88
 Godefroy, Reine Charlotte 65
 Gray, Jonathan Abraham 38
 Greene, Colonel Christopher 23
 Grey Sister of the Cross, founder..... 59
 Guibord, Pierre..... 59

H

Hadvelt, Thomas 53
 Haight, Ann..... 15
 Haight, Phoebe..... 15
 Harbick, Louis..... 63
 Harbick, Victoria..... 57, 63, 64, 72
 Harday, Mr..... 136
 Hardy, Mr..... 65
 Hatfield, Abigail 16, 31, 43, 54
 Hatfield, Abraham..... 45, 53, 54, 134
 Hatfield, Amy (or Emme)..... 54
 Hatfield, Colonel Isaac..... 25, 31, 34, 43
 Hatfield, Daniel..... 54
 Hatfield, David..... 54
 Hatfield, Elizabeth 31, 34, 37, 40, 43, 44,
 45, 47, 49, 53, 54, 60
 Hatfield, Elizbaeth 42, 44
 Hatfield, Hepzibah 54
 Hatfield, Isaac 42, 53, 54, 122, 136
 Hatfield, Jane 54
 Hatfield, Mary 54
 Hatfield, Peter 53
 Hatfield, Richard..... 123, 124
 Hatfield, Sarah 54
 Hatfield, Thomas..... 53
 Heathcote, Caleb 14
 Hemming, George J. 78
 Hendricus, Clara 53
 Henry, Lucie 81
 Henry, Professor 122, 138
 Hentem, Anne 53
 Héroux, Louise..... 69
 Hewlett, Colonel Richard..... 21
 Holmes, Benjamin..... 50
 Holmes, Colonel 24
 Hooglant, Dirck..... 11
 Hoskins, J.C.C..... 105
 Houé, Marie Anne..... 56

Howe, Lord 10
 Hughes, Charlotte 38, 60
 Hughes, James..... 132
 Hunter, Elijah..... 26, 123
 Hunter, P. 127
 Hyatt, John 124

J

Jans, Anneke 13, 28
 Jansen, Roeloff..... 13
 Jansen, Sara..... 12, 14
 Jobin, Alfred Hilarion 70
 Jobin, Joseph Damase 70
 Jobin, Joseph Hilarion..... 41, 44, 69, 74
 Jobin, Julie Hermine 70
 Jobin, Maud..... 93
 Jobin, Rachelle Mathilde 70
 Jobin, Sophis 84
 Johnson, John..... 132
 Joyce, Mr..... 56

K

Kane, Will'm..... 44
 Keefer, Isaac 124
 Kelley, Helena..... 57, 63
 Kelly, John 63
 Kennedy, John..... 54
 Kesson, M. 125
 Kieft, Governor Wilhelm 10
 Kierstede, Catherine..... 11, 13
 Kierstede, Hans 11, 14
 Kierstede, Lucas..... 11
 Kip, Abraham..... 9, 11
 Kip, Beertjen 9
 Kip, Benjamin 11, 12
 Kip, Blandina 12
 Kip, Catharina 12
 Kip, Femmetje..... 9
 Kip, Frederic Ellsworth..... 12
 Kip, Hans 12
 Kip, Heindrik 9
 Kip, Hendrick Hendricksen 8, 9
 Kip, Hendrick Hendricksen 40
 Kip, Hendricus (Hendrick)..... 11
 Kip, Henricus 12
 Kip, Isaack 9
 Kip, Jacob 9

Kip, Jacob 10, 12
 Kip, Jacob (Jacobus) 11
 Kip, Jacobus 9, 11, 12
 Kip, Jesse 11, 12
 Kip, Johannes 11, 12, 13
 Kip, Maria 12
 Kip, Maryken (Maria) 11
 Kip, Petrus 11
 Kip, Rachel 11
 Kip, Samuel 10, 11
 Kip, Sarah 12
 Kip, Tryntjen 9
 Kipp, Abraham 15
 Kipp, Adolphe Wilfrid 64
 Kipp, Agnes Maude Mathilde 63
 Kipp, Amable Samuel 57
 Kipp, André 72
 Kipp, Anita 72
 Kipp, Augustin Wulfhild 63
 Kipp, Augustin Wulfhild (Wilfrid) 57
 Kipp, Benjamin 8
 Kipp, Benjamin 12, 13, 14, 15, 17, 20,
 25, 26, 27, 32, 34, 38, 43, 45, 122,
 123, 124, 125, 128, 129
 Kipp, Captain Samuel 25, 43
 Kipp, Captain Thomas 43
 Kipp, Charlotte 4
 Kipp, Charlotte 39, 40, 41, 44, 55, 60, 61,
 68, 69, 70, 96
 Kipp, Elisabeth 59
 Kipp, Elizabeth 4, 15, 37, 39, 41, 55, 57,
 58, 61, 63, 64, 65, 66, 68, 96, 105,
 122, 138
 Kipp, Ellen Theresa 63
 Kipp, Eugene George 71
 Kipp, Frederick Ellsworth 28
 Kipp, Freelove 16
 Kipp, George Grinnell 71, 79, 80
 Kipp, George Grinnell 62
 Kipp, Hélène 63
 Kipp, Incille 72
 Kipp, Jacob 20
 Kipp, Jacobus 15
 Kipp, Jacques (James) 57
 Kipp, James 15, 25, 32, 34, 37, 39, 40,
 47, 55, 61, 62, 64, 70, 80, 96, 97, 98,
 99, 101, 102, 103, 105, 122, 128, 137,
 138
 Kipp, James Grinnell 71, 79
 Kipp, Jesse 15, 25, 129
 Kipp, Johannes 28
 Kipp, Joseph 55, 62, 71, 101
 Kipp, Joseph Arthur Oscar 72
 Kipp, Joseph Aubut 71
 Kipp, Joseph Oscar Arthur 64
 Kipp, Joseph William 72
 Kipp, Joseph William 64
 Kipp, Julia 62, 101
 Kipp, Karen Kay 80
 Kipp, Louis Arthur Silva 72
 Kipp, Louis Arthur Silva 64
 Kipp, Louise Charlotte 96
 Kipp, Lydia 16
 Kipp, Margaret 63
 Kipp, Marguerite Rose 57
 Kipp, Marie Anna Eva 64
 Kipp, Marie Anne 57
 Kipp, Marie Célia Béatrice 64
 Kipp, Marie Elisa Georgiana 63
 Kipp, Marie Hélène 63
 Kipp, Marie Rose Linda Laurentine ... 64
 Kipp, Mart Ann 61
 Kipp, Mary 15, 16, 41, 62, 66, 71, 96, 98
 Kipp, Mary Mrs. 131
 Kipp, Mary Ann 55, 62
 Kipp, Mary Ann 63
 Kipp, Mary Lorraine 71, 80
 Kipp, May 72, 131
 Kipp, Mrs. Samuel 41
 Kipp, Oscar 72
 Kipp, Samuel 4, 8
 Kipp, Samuel. 14, 16, 17, 20, 21, 23, 24,
 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41,
 45, 53, 55, 56, 57, 60, 62, 63, 96, 122,
 125, 126, 127, 128, 129, 130, 138
 Kipp, Samuel 42
 Kipp, Samuel Captain 131
 Kipp, Samuel A. 12
 Kipp, Sarah 15, 16
 Kipp, Silva 72
 Kipp, Thomas 16, 25, 31, 33, 34, 54, 127,
 128, 129, 136

Kipp, Wilfrid John	63	Lambert, Jacques.....	82
Kipp, William	15, 27, 57, 63, 64, 72, 128, 129	Lambert, Joseph Henri.....	74, 82
Knapp, Captain Moses.....	21, 23, 31, 34, 38, 131, 132	Lambert, Pierre	82
Knapp, Captn.	128	Lamoureux, Oddillon.....	120
Knapp, Daniel	49	Lamson, John Wetmore	54
Knapp, Edward William	50	Lamson, Joseph Rev.	54
Knapp, Elizabeth..	35, 38, 45, 46, 47, 49, 130	Langlois, L.G.L priest.....	84
Knapp, Elsey	43, 135	Langlois, Valérie.....	78
Knapp, Helen Elizabeth	50	Lapierre, Edesse.....	94
Knapp, Henry Bruner.....	48, 49	Larocque, Aline.....	80, 86
Knapp, James	47, 48	Larocque, Louis Hertel de Rouville....	80
Knapp, Joseph.....	47, 48, 49, 50	Larocque, Marie Aline	73, 80
Knapp, Marie	138	Larpenteur	70
Knapp, Mary ..	16, 34, 35, 38, 41, 45, 53, 55, 56, 57, 60, 96, 122, 130	Laurier, Louis.....	77
Knapp, Moses	25, 40, 42, 43, 44, 45, 47, 48, 49, 53, 54, 58, 60, 96, 122, 133, 135, 139	Laurier, Ls.....	77
Knapp, Mrs. Moses	43	Laverdure, Marcel.....	72
Knapp, Nicolas.....	42	Law, James.....	128
Knapp, William.....	47, 48	Lawrence, Samuel.....	124
Kronkhyte, James.....	124	Lawrence, Sarah.....	54
Kurz, Rudolph Friederich	99	Leavitt, Jon.....	135
L		Leggett, Abraham	124
Labelle, A.E.	85	Lemoyne	75
Labelle, Berthe.....	85	Leonais, Joseph.....	106
Labelle, Eugénie	84, 85, 90, 92, 93	Leprohon, Antoinette	82, 88, 89
Labelle, H.....	91	Leprohon, Bernard Hector Viateur	
Labelle, Henriette.....	85	Raymond.....	76
Labelle, Hospice	85	Leprohon, Charles.....	61
Labelle, J.B.H.	85	Leprohon, Charles B.	84
Labelle, J.H.	85	Leprohon, Charles Bernard Henri	68, 73, 75, 82, 83
Labelle, Jean Baptiste Hospice	84	Leprohon, Charles Joseph Antoine	
Labelle, L.G.	85	Lanaudière.....	76
Labelle, M. priest.....	66	Leprohon, Charles Joseph Gustave	
Labelle, Marie	85	Amédée	76
Labelle, Marie Louise S.....	85	Leprohon, Chs. B.	78
Labelle, Marie Sophie Eugénie.....	84, 85	Leprohon, Chs. B.H.	84
Labelle, Yvonne.....	64, 72	Leprohon, doctor Bernard Henri.....	75
Labrie, Doctor Jacques.....	83	Leprohon, H.	78, 79
Lagarde, Andre T, priest.....	66	Leprohon, Marie Anne.....	83, 88, 89, 90
Lambert, Clarice	82	Leprohon, Marie Anne Caroline Thérèse	
Lambert, Gilbert.....	82	76, 83
		Leprohon, Marie Bernadette Graziella	
		Evangéline.....	76
		Leprohon, Marie Caroline Suzanne	
		Verchères	76

Leprohon, Marie Catherine Noélie	
Évéline	76
Leprohon, Marie Charlotte Léonide	
Amanda	76
Leprohon, Marie Desanges Lucille	
Mélanie	76
Leprohon, Marie Hermine Rachel	76
Leprohon, Marie Hortense Hectorine .	76
Leprohon, Marie Joséphine Elisabeth	
Antoinette.....	76, 82
Leprohon, Rachel.....	85
Lerpohon, Joséphine D	84
Letellier, L.D.....	106
Letellier, Louis D.....	106
Levesque, Anna.....	64, 72
Levesque, Joseph Arthur.....	72
Levesque, Joseph Arthur.....	64
Levesque, L.....	59
Lindsay, Captain	131
Lockwood, Eleanor	42
Loedel, Caroline.....	75
Loedel, Mrs. Pierre Charles	75
Loedel, Pierre Charles.....	75
Loranger, Corinne.....	74
Losberg, Genl.....	128
Lubberts, Tryntie.....	8, 9
Lussier, Vitaline.....	62
Lyonais, Joseph.....	112

M

Magnan, Louis Antoine Adolphe.....	61
Margane	75
Marguard.....	128
Marks, Constant R.	105
Martel, Marie	64, 72
Martin, E. priest	78
Masson, Adolphe	84
Masson, Léocadie	84, 85
Massu, Marie Magdeleine.....	138
Massue, Marie Madeleine.....	58
Mathieu, Eugène	93
Mathieu, Louise	86, 93
Mathieu, P.	61
Maximilian, Prince Alexander Philippe	
.....	98
May, Valéda.....	64, 72
McCaughey, Dan V.	83, 89, 90

McCaughey, Edward.....	90
McCaughey, Eileen.....	90
McCaughey, Frances.....	90
McCaughey, Kathleen.....	90
McCaughey, Marie	90
McCaughey, Robert	90
McCaughey, Shirley	90
McEwen, Peter	50
McTavish, Anne.....	48
McTavish, Annie.....	50
McTavish, Duncan	50
Mercier, Sophie.....	59
Merritt, Mary.....	15
Meyer, Jan Durckssen.....	9
Miller, Anna.....	54
Miller, Robert.....	72
Mittleburger, William	48
Miville, Marie Louise	96
Morris, Colonel Roger	42, 134
Morris, Richard.....	125
Mosier, Lieutenant	24
Mountain, J.	44
Mountain, Jehosaphat Rev.....	39

N

Napp, Marina Lady	57
Nobert, Alexandre.....	82, 88
Nobert, Elizabeth	89
Nobert, Fernand	88
Nobert, Gisèle	88
Nobert, Guy.....	89
Nobert, Hélène	89
Nobert, Louise.....	89
Nobert, Marcel	88
Nobert, Paul André	88
Nobert, Yolande.....	88
Normandin, A.A.....	74
Normandin, Annette.....	74
Northrup, George	120

O

Ogden, Elizabeth.....	42
Olivier, Albert.....	79
Olivier, Marie Laurette	79
Oocxs, Valentin.....	53
Osborn, Joseph.....	124

P

Paquette, Albert.....	64
Paquette, Jean.....	64
Partenain, Angélique.....	66
Partenais, Etienne.....	66
Partenais, Louis.....	59, 66
Partenais, S.A.C.	77
Partenais, Suzanne Antoinette Caroline	77
Partenay, Angélique.....	66
Partenay, M. L. Henriette.....	66
Partenias, Octave.....	66
Parthenai, Angélique.....	67
Parthenais, Angélique	66
Parthenay, Louis	67
Patterson, John	24
Patterson, Nancy	58, 139
Pemberton, Colonel Jeremy	32
Pemberton, Jeremiah.....	125
Pemberton, Jeremy.....	136
Perodeau, N.....	61
Perrault, Angélique	66
Pétrimoulx, Médard	58
Pétrimoulx, Pierre	58
Pichette, Lionel	72
Picott, M. A.....	70
Picotte, C.F.....	113
Picotte, Honoré	98
Pitcher, Maj.....	108
Plassmann, Martha Edgerton	62
Postras, Jean	84, 90
Porter, Clyde H.	102
Powell, John.....	15
Prévost, Alice.....	84, 90
Prévost, Anne Marie	83, 89, 90
Prévost, Emile. 76, 78, 79, 83, 88, 89, 90	
Prévost, Gabrielle.....	81, 83, 88
Prévost, Lucie	84, 90
Prévost, Mr. Emile	68
Prévost, Wilfrid.....	83
Prew, George.....	74
Price, John.....	15
Primeau, Mr.	118
Proulx, Anna	63
Purdy, Ebenezer	124

Q

Quenneville, Salomé	92
---------------------------	----

R

Raubeau, Hubert	98
Révillon Frères Limited	81
Reynolds, James.....	124
Richard, Alphonse.....	78
Richard, Anna Rachel	79
Richard, Arhtur	92
Richard, Arthur 79, 80, 84, 85, 86, 92, 93	
Richard, Avial	78
Richard, David	77
Richard, Eugénie Labelle.....	85
Richard, Hermine D.	85
Richard, J.B.A.....	78
Richard, J.U.	78, 84, 85
Richard, Jean.....	77, 86, 93
Richard, Jean Baptiste.....	77
Richard, Jean Urgel.....	68, 77, 78, 84, 85
Richard, L.J. Arthur	85
Richard, L.J. Arthur Mrs.....	85
Richard, L.J.A.	78, 91
Richard, Louis.....	78, 79, 86, 90, 92, 93
Richard, Louis Joseph Arthur 79, 84, 85, 90	
Richard, Louise	94
Richard, Lucile.....	92
Richard, Lucille.....	86
Richard, Marguerite	77
Richard, Marie	86
Richard, Marie Anne.....	77
Richard, Mathieu.....	93
Richard, Maurice.....	79, 86, 93
Richard, Pierre	79, 86, 93
Richard, Raymond	93
Richard, Urgel.....	77, 78, 79
Rocheleau, Elizabeth.....	40, 55, 61, 96
Rocheleau, François Xavier	96
Rochon, Arthur	63
Rogers, Colonel.....	125
Rogers, Colonel Robert.....	20
Rolland, Jean Baptiste.....	74
Roque, Lessire vicar-general	66
Rosenell, John	135
Rouleau, Hubert	57

Routier, Sophie 58, 139
 Roux, Jean Henry Auguste Messire.. 58,
 138
 Roy, J. J. priest..... 66
 Roy, Josephe 60
 Runnells, Robert 16
 Rutherford, Peter..... 48
 Ryckman, Johannes..... 11
 Ryckman, Margrietje 11

S

Sabourin, Scholastique..... 64, 72
 Sackett, Captain 24
 Saulnier, Ls. 59
 Saulnier, Ls. ptre 139
 Savard, J.E. 85
 Schoolcraft. Mr. 137
 Serrazin, Marguerite 64
 Simard, Marie Joseph..... 67
 Slasor, Ebenezer..... 124
 Smith, Cordelia 49
 Smith, Dr. William R. 112
 Smith, Edward Knapp Wurtele 49
 Smith, Eleanor Elizabeth 49
 Smith, Elizabeth..... 60
 Smith, George 46, 49
 Smith, Hannah Sophie 49
 Smith, James 58, 139
 Smith, Margaret 49
 Smith, Olive 46
 Smith, Oliver 38, 39, 45, 47, 49, 60, 122,
 130
 Smith, Richard 46, 47, 49, 58, 139
 Smith, Richard Pierce 49
 Smith, Susanna..... 58, 139
 Smith, William Oliver..... 49
 Snyder, Catalyntje..... 9
 Somerville, Reverend J. 60
 Sorin, Vincen priest 84
 Soupiran, Elizabeth..... 58
 Spencer, Sylvester..... 48
 Spier, Sarah 12
 Spoone, N..... 41
 St. Amour, Délia 64
 St. Amour, Francois 64
 Stephens, Richard 39
 Stevens, Maria..... 11, 12

Stewart, James..... 45, 130
 Stuart, Reverend George Okill..... 96
 Stuyvesant, Peter..... 8
 Stuyvesant, Peter..... 20
 Sulnier, LS 58

T

Taylor, Hugh..... 50
 Thessier, Charlotte 60
 Thorn, Tamar 16
 Tilton, Elijah 135
 Todd, J.B.S..... 113
 Toosey, Reverend Philip..... 37
 Totten, Captain Gilbert 21
 Totten, Freelove 16, 21, 34, 41
 Totten, Gilbert..... 128
 Totten, Peter 16, 17
 Traversier, Agust..... 120
 Traversier, Augustin 65
 Traversier, Mr. 65
 Travis, Elizabeth 53
 Tredway, O.O..... 106
 Treusdale, Jesse..... 124
 Trotter, William 53
 Trudel, Delphine 82
 Truteau, A.F. 77
 Tryon, Governor 21, 125
 Tryon, William..... 21, 133
 Turcotte, F.M. 59
 Turgeon, Marie Anne..... 81
 Turner, Margaret..... 72

V

Vallée, Jos priest 77
 Valois, P.C. 130
 Van der Heul, Abraham Janssen..... 9
 Van St. Obyn, Janssen 9
 Van Vleck, Abraham 12
 Van Vleck, Magdelena..... 11
 Ven Vleck, Isaac 11
 Verplanck, Gelyn 11
 Vervalje, Maria 9
 Vézina, Berthélémi 61
 Villeneuve, Blanche..... 72
 Villeneuve, Blanche Antoinette 64, 72
 Villeneuve, Théodule..... 72
 Villeneuve, Théophile..... 64

von Knyphausen, Lieutenant-Colonel
Wilhelm..... 10

W

Wallace, Uriah 124
Walter, Robert..... 14
War Eagle..... 108
Ward, Daniel..... 54
Washington, General George..... 20
Weagant 55
Weagent, Madame 96
Weagent, Margaret..... 101
Weeks, James..... 15

Wessels, Hendrickje..... 11
Westcott, Abigail 42
Willett, Martha..... 54
Wilson, Leota..... 73
Wood, Halsey..... 124
Wradley, S..... 41
Wurtele, George 49
Wurtele, Hannah 47, 49
Wurtele, Jacob..... 47

Y

Young, John 49